

Brit. 42 ^e in 4^o —

Godwin

2 Bilder

121



Holbein pinxit



Natus . 1491
Jun . 28 .
Patri Successit
in Regno
1509 Apr . 22 .

Obijt 1547
Jan . 28 .
Anno Aetatis
57 .

Annales
OF
ENGLAND.

Containing the Reignes

OF

HENRY the Eighth.

EDWARD the Sixt.

Queene MARY.

Written in *Latin* by the Right Hono-
rable and Right Reverend Father in
God, FRANCIS Lord
Bishop of Hereford.

Thus Englished, corrected and inlar-
ged with the Author's consent, by
MORGAN GODWYN.

Nec verbum verbo curabo reddere fides
Interpres. — HORAT.

LONDON,
Printed by A. Islip,
and W. Stansby,

1630.

BIBLIOTHECA
REGIA
MONACENSIS.



The Translators Dedication.

TO THE RIGHT

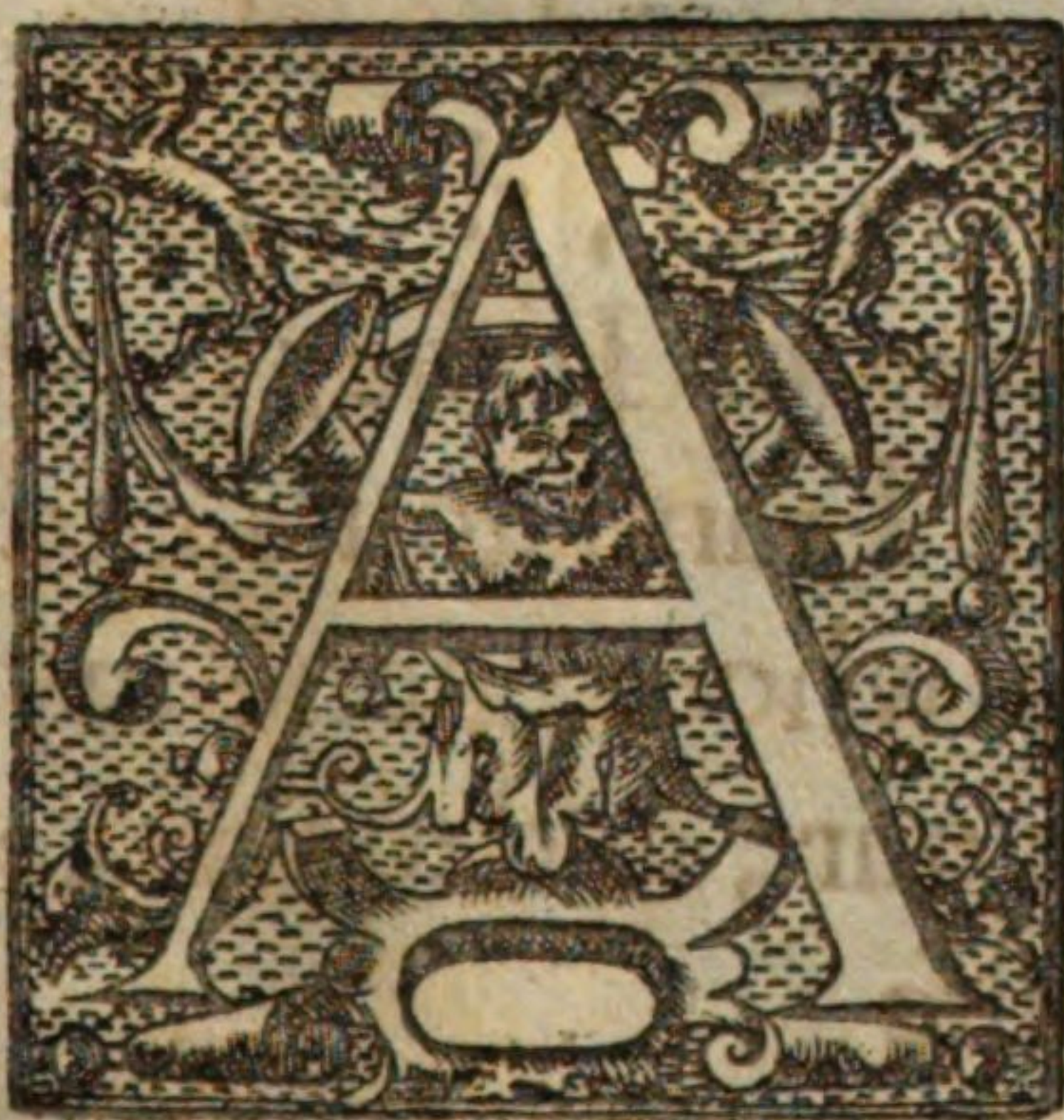
Honourable, the Lord

SCUDAMORE,

Viscount

SLEGO.

My Lord,



Although I haue ever
been averse from works
of this nature, as desi-
rous to know them in
the Originall, rather
then in any after-taught
language; yet have I
not vnwillingly vndergone the taske of this
Translation. It is an *English* History of those
turbulent times, whereof no one hath writ-
ten either so largely or freely as this Au-
thour,

The Translators Dedication.

thour, who intended it for the common good, whereof the meere *English*, without these or the like paines of some other would have beene incapable. Your Lordship hath knowne it in the *Latine*, which tongue you have naturalized. Wherefore this Dedication may seeme needles. But it is due to You as the worke of your servant, in which regard it craves your Honorable Patronage. It hath hitherto walked vnder Royall Protection. Other would not have befitted the Authour of this ingenuous History, by the exemplified miseries whereof the busie Spirits of these times may learne rightly to deeme of our moderne happinesse. But even small grievances in any *Part* make vs insensible of the generall good estate of the *whole*. We wil be ignorant of our good, and unhappy. As for these *Annales*, they have long passed with approbation. If they now distast, let the fault be the Translatours, and the Pardon Yours; to whom alone my maiden pen sueth for favour, and to whose service dedicateth himselfe

Your Honours

most humbly devoted,

MORG. GODWYN.



The Translator to the
R E A D E R.



*He Author's Preface
hath occasioned mine.
Wherein it may be ex-
pected I should give a
publique accompt of this
action. I had once other-
wise resolved. But it is
the fashion. And therefore know (gentle Rea-
der) that Evill is oftimes the (accidentall)
cause of Good. Idlenesse invited me to the tri-
all of my pen in some few loose sheets, which my
fancy converted to the private vse of a beloved
friend. Other end had I none. Sithence the Re-
verend Author hath beene pleased to impose that
as a serious taske, which I had wantonly begun.
Nature commanded duty and obedience, and
so have I the glory of the time, To be in print.
Sed dic, Posthume, de tribus capellis.
How doth the Authours Preface conduce to
mine? Why thus. To many who perhaps will not
at*

The Translator to the Reader.

at first consider, that this worke is but a Translation, or seeke advantages to expend their Censures, his may seeme impertinent. But let them know, that these Annales were first written, In gratiam Exterorum Res nostras noscendi cupidorum. So much witnesseth the first Latin Edition. Peruse it and finde it. I am but an Interpreter, of whom, I hope, thou wilt not expect a dictionary translation. Neither quarrell the omission of some things, the knowledge whereof is to our Natives so innate, that now to insert them, were as bad as to farce with tautologies, and make this little volume nauseous. Yet hath it lost nothing of its bulke, whatsoever it hath of its splendour, those defalcations being here and there in the course of the history supplied with not vnnecessary additions, whereto the Authors approbation and consent was not wanting. As for errors of the Presse, blame the Printer, not me. If thou by this reape either profit or pleasure, thanke the Author, whose benefit it is that thou hast it; and that not tongue-tied, but more then single-languaged. Good is of it selfe diffusive, and he participates so much of it, that he cannot indeavour an envious confinement of it. Farewell.

To

The Authors Epistle Dedicatory.

TO MY MOST

Gracious Sovereigne

CHARLES,

King of Great Britaine, France,

and Irland,

The most invict Defender of

the FAITH.

Most Royall Sir,



Hese Commentaries
containing the Acts of
three Princes, began a-
bout some ten yeares
since vnder the Prote-
ction of Your most Au-
gust Father to breath
the common aire; and but for so Gracious
an Aspect, had suffered even at the instant of
their birth. For the errours of the Presse had
made them such, as might have deterred e-

A

ven

The Authors Epistle Dedicatory.

ven extreme impudence from so presumptive a Dedication. Yet such as they were, they found Acceptance and Favour at His Royall Hands. Hence am I encouraged to consecrate this second (but corrected) Edition to Your Maiesty, VVho inherit as well Your Father's Vertues, as his Kingdomes. Neither indeed can it befit any other after King *JAMES* of ever Sacred Memory. Most humbly therefore beseecheth Your Maiesty to daigne it the like Gracious Acceptance, who with the same loyalty and observance dedicateth and consecrateth to Your Maiesty himselfe and
his

Your Maiesties

most humble

Chaplain

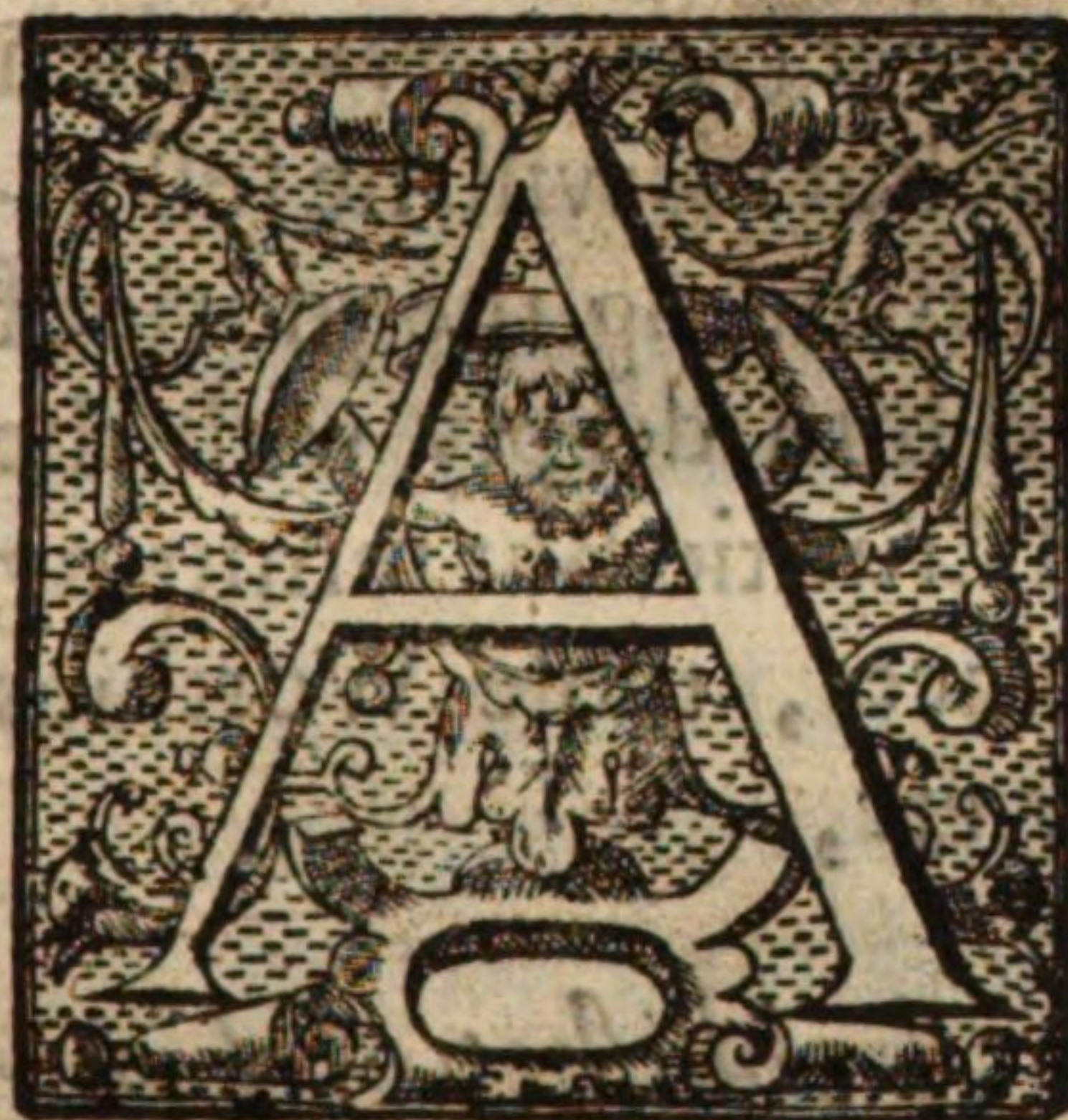
FR: HERE.F.^d



ANNALS OF ENGLAND.

From the Yeare 1508. to the
Yeare, 1558.

The first Booke.



After the death of HENRY the Seventh, his only Sonne HENRY Prince of *Wales* vndertooke the government of this Kingdome. He had then attained to the age of eightene yeares, and was richly adorned with endowments both of Bodie and Mind. For of Stature he was tall, of a beautifull Aspect, and of Forme through all his age truly besee-
ming a King: hee was wittie, docile, and naturally propense to Letters, vntill pleasures (to which the libertie of Soueraigntie easily prompteth) did somewhat vnseasonably withdraw him from his Studies; to these you may adde a great Spirit aspiring to the glorie both of Fortitude and Munificence. This to-
ward.

I

1509.

Henry 8.
1509.

*This print
is of the
first.*

1509.

wardlineffe was so seconded by the happie care of his Tutors, that if the end of his Raigne had beene answerable to the beginning, HENRY the Eighth might deservedly haue beene ranked amongst the greatest of our Kings. For if you consider his first twentie yeares, you shall not easily find any one, that either more happily managed affaires abroad, or gouerned more wisely at home, or that bare greater sway among his Neighbour Princes. This I thinke ought chiefly to be ascribed to the prouidence of his wise Father, and his Grandmother then still aliue. For they tooke care, that he should haue wise and vertuous Ouer-seers in his youth, by whose assistance hauing once passed the hazards thereof, he happily auoided those rockes, whereon so many daily suffer wracke. But these either dying, or being so broken with age, that they could bee no longer imployed in affaires of State, and He himselfe being now come to those yeares, that commonly cast aside modestie (*Modestie, I say, the Guardian of that great Vertue*) then making vse of no Counsellour, but his will, he fell into those vices, which notwithstanding the glorie of his former Raigne, branded him deeply with the fowle stains of Luxurie and Crueltie. But remitting those things to their proper places, those Worthies appointed his Counsaillours were,

*His priue
Counsaile.*

William Warham Archbishop of Canturburie, and Lord Chancelour of England.

Richard Fox Bishop of Winchester.

Thomas Ruthall Bishop of Durham.

Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey, Lord Treasurer of England.

George Talbot Earle of Shrewsburie,
Lord

Lord Steward of the Kings Household.

Charles Somerset Lord Chamberlaine.

Sir Thomas Louell,

Sir Henrie VVyat,

Sir Edward Poynings,

} Knights.

1509.

The funerals of Henry the 7.

S. Stephens Chappell.

These men, the solemnitie of the dead Kings Funerals being duly and magnificently performed, erected him a Tombe all of brasse, accounted one of the stateliest Monuments of *Europe*, which one would hardly conceiue by the bill of accompts. For it is reported that it cost but a thousand pound. The Monument is to be seene at *Westminster* (the vsuall place of our Kings Interments) in that admirable Chappell dedicated to *Saint Stephen*, by this King heretofore built from the ground, a testimonie of his religious pietie. I haue read, that this Chappel was raised to that height for the summe of fourtecne thousand pounds and no more, and that he at the same time built a Ship of an vnusuall burthen called from him *The great Henrie*, which by that time it was rigged, cost little lesse, then that stately Chappell. But now, O HENRY, what is become of that Ship of thine? that other worke (besides the reward of Heauen) will perpetually proclaim thy pious munificence. Hence learne, ô Kings, that the true Trophies of Glorie are not to be placed in Armorie and Arsenalls, but (and those more durable) in pious Workes. Seeke, first seeke the Kingdome of God and the righteousnesse thereof, and without doubt all other things shall be added vnto you.

But to goe on in my proposed course, although HENRY the Eighth began his Raigne the two and twentieth of *April* 1509. his Coronation was deferred to the foure and twentieth of *Iune*. In the meane time, his Counsaile thought it would proue a profitable

The Coronation of Henry the 8.

1509.

His marriage.

The death
of Lady
Margaret
Countesse of
Richmond.

ble policie for the King to marrie CATHERINE the Widdow of Prince ARTHUR, his deceased Brother, and Daughter to FERDINAND King of Castile; for otherwise that huge masse of monie assigned for her jointure must yearely bee transported out of the Kingdome. Neither was there at first any other doubt made of this match, then whether it were approued by the Ecclesiasticall Constitutions, for as much as the Scripture (said some) forbade any man to marrie his *brothers wife*. But this rub was easily remoued by the omnipotence of the Popes Bull, in-
 somuch that presently vpon the Dispensation of Pope *Iulius*, on the third of *Iune*, vnder a malignant Constellation, the Nuptials of these Princes were solemnized, and they both crowned the foure and twentieth of *Iune* next following, being Saint *Iohn Baptists* day. At these Solemnities there wanted neither pompe nor acclamations of the Estates of the Realme. But to shew that of *Salomon* to be true, *The end of mirth is heauinesse*, five ^{dayes} had not yet runne their course since the Coronation, when MARGARET Countesse of *Richmond* the Kings Grandmother made an exchange of this life with death. She was a very godly and vertuous Ladie, and one who for her benefits to the Estate, deserved with all honour to be commended to the perpetuall memorie of Posteritie: but her euerliuing workes will so farre set forth her praise, that the paines of any Writer will proue altogether needlesse. Yet notwithstanding, omitting other things, it will savour somewhat of ingratitude, if I should not recount what she hath conferred vpon our Vniuersities: Shee founded two Colledges at *Cambridge*, one dedicated to our Saviour CHRIST, the other to Saint Iohn the Euangelist, and endowed them both with such large Revenues, that at this time besides Officers and Seruants, there are about

bout two hundred Students maintained in them: shee also left Lands to both Vniuersities, out of the rents whereof two Doctors publike Professors of Diuinitie to this day doe receiue their annuall stipends. Shee lies interred neere her Sonne in a faire Tombe of Touchstone, whereon lies her Image of guilded brasse.

1510.

Anno Dom. 1510. Reg. 2.

HENRY the Seventh Father to this our Eighth, some few yeares before his death had caused an inquisition to bee made throughout the Kingdome of the breach of the penall Statutes, saying, that *Lawes were to no purpose, vnlesse the feare of punishment did force men to obserue them.* But the Inquisitors proceeding so rigorously, that euen the least faults were punished according to the Law, which inflicted a pecuniarie Mulct; they that were touch't (saith *Polydore Virgil*) cried out, that this proceeded out of Covetousnesse, rather then Severitie. But the wiser sort conceiued the Kings intent to be, partly to curbe the fierce mind of the people bred vp in faction, partly that by these Fines hee might not only weaken the rich, but also increase his owne strength, and fortifie himselfe against ciuill Attempts (whereof hee had lately seene some sparkles flie abroad) if so bee any smothered coale should happen to breake out into a flame. What euer the matter was, many there were, who by accusing others sought the Kings favour, and enlarged their owne estates, amongst whom two were chiefe; the one was called RICHARD EMPSON, the other EDMUND DUDLEY, both Lawiers, and both for having served the Kings turne, lately made Barons of the Exchequer. It is said that

1510.

Empson and
Dudley.

EMP-

1510.

EMPSON was borne at Torcester in Northampton Shire, his Father was a Siuier. DVDDLEY, though he were well descended, yet being not befriended by fortune, long struggled with aduersitie. But after they had some moneths taken paines in these matters, both of them arise to that greatnesse, that there were few of the Nobilitie, that would not crouch to them and be ambitious of their fauour. Therefore it is not so much to be wondred at, if they grew exceeding wealthy: but this wealth drew with it an envy greater then it selfe, which neuerthelesse did them little hurt during the life of HENRY the Seventh, but afterwards cast them both downe as low, as enuie could haue wisht. The King vpon his death-bed commanded in his Will and Testament, that restitution should bee made to all, who had beene wronged by the Exchequer. Whereupon infinite numbers flocking to the Court, and demanding restitution, there could not a fitter means be thought of to stop their mouthes, then by committing of EMPSON and DVDDLEY the occasioners thereof, to the people as Sacrifices to appease their fury. They were therefore arraigned and condemned of high Treason. And these things were done presently vpon HENRY the Eighth his comming to the Crowne. So their goods being seized vpon, they for a whole yeare endured the miseries, that vsually accompany a prison, and yet were the Commons as eager against them as euer. Whence it should first arise I know not, but such a report there was, that the Queene had begged the poore mens pardons. The Nobilitie disdainig, that such meane fellowes had beene heretofore so prevalent with their Prince, and the Commons being easily incited against them by some as eager enemies to them as themselves, cried out, that they were cheated of their iust reuenge, and wearied the King with con-

continual petitions for their death, he was in a manner forced to satisfie them. Whereupon on the seuenteenth day of *August*, they were both publickly beheaded. Such was the end of EMPSON and DUDLEY, who abounding with wealth, and flourishing vnder their Princes fauour, while they set light by all things else, became a sacrifice to the giddy multitude. And it may serue to teach vs to vse our power moderately, and to take heed how wee giue offence to that Beast with many heads (I meane the People) which being angred and hauing once got the raines, rageth like a tumultuous Sea. DUDLEY, left behind him a sonne named IOHN, who, as if he had beene heire to his fathers fortune, being created Duke of *Northumberland*, concluded his powerfull life with the like vnhappie end, leauing much Issue behind him euen to our time, but yet whercof the heires masse haue long since failed.

1511.

Anno Dom. 1511. Reg. 3.

THis yeare on New yeares day the Queene was deliuered of a Sonne, Heire apparant to this Crowne, but hee out-liued not the three and twentieth of the ensuing *Februarie*, to the great griefe of the King and Kingdome.

1511.

About the same time there came Embassadours from FERDINAND King of *Arragon*, who craved of the King his Sonne in Law fifteene hundred auxiliary Archers. Hee was then in hostilitie with the *Moores*, inhabiting *Afrique*. The King very willingly granted their request, and having leuied the full number, imbarqued them for *Spaine*, in foure ships of the Nauy Royall, vnder the command of THO-

An expedition
into *Afrique*.

MAS

1511.

Into Gueldres.

MAS Lord Darcie. They were scarce arriued there, when newes was brought, that a Peace being made, FERDINAND stood in no farther need of their aide. Yet euery one was liberally paid, the Generall, and those of greatest note that accompanied him, were richly rewarded, and all being dismissed with many thanks safely returned home.

In their absence, MARGARET Duchesse of Savoy (who was Daughter to the Emperour MAXIMILIAN, and Gouvernesse of the *Netherlands* vnder CHARLES the Infant of *Spaine*) preuailed with our King for the like number of Archers, shee hauing then wars with the Duke of *Gueldres*, against whom she meant to imploy them. These men in the space of five moneths did many braue exploits at *Brimnost*, *Aske*, and *Venloo*, vnder the command of Sir EDWARD POYNINGS a braue Souldier, and in great fauour with his Prince. Of them fourteene hundred returned home much commended and well rewarded; the fortune of warre had cut off one hundred. Foure Captaines in regard of their valour were Knighted by the Infant CHARLES, afterwardes Emperour: viz. JOHN NORTON, JOHN FOG, JOHN SCOT, and THOMAS LYND.

Barton a Pirat taken.

The King of Scots had then warre with the *Portugall*, vnder pretext whereof one ANDREW BARTON a famous Pirat tooke all ships that coasted either *England* or *Scotland*, affirming them alwayes to bee *Portugals* of what Nation soeuer they were, or at least fraught with *Portugall* marchandise. The King sent EDWARD HOWARD Lord Admirall of *England*, and his brother the Lord THOMAS HOWARD eldest sonne to the Earle of *Surrey*, with one JOHN HOPTON to take this Rouer. When they had once found him out, after a long and bloudie fight they tooke him aliue (but mortally wounded) with his

his two ships and all his companions that survived the fight, and brought them to London.

1512.

Anno Dom. 1512. Reg. 4.

AS yet our HENRY had no warre with any foraine Prince, neither did the wiser sort wish that he should haue any. But hee a young King in the heat of one and twentie yeares, was transported with a vehement desire of warre, which (saith the Prouerbe) is sweet to them, that neuer tasted of it. Although he had about a yeare or two before made a League with LEWIS the Twelue of France: yet hee was easily entreated by Pope IULIUS to renounce this Confederacie. This Pope more like to that CÆSAR, whose Name hee bare, then PETER, from whom he would faine deriue his Succession, that like another NERO, sitting still hee might from on high be a spectator, while the whole world was on fire, had written Letters to our King, wherein hee entreated his assistance towards the suppression of the French, who without feare of God or man (these were the pretended causes) had not only sacrilegiously laid hold on the reuenues of the Church, had caused Cardinall WILLIAM to vsurpe the Papacie, had upheld ALFONSO of Ferrara, and the Bentivogli in rebellion against him, but had also farther decreed, to make Italy the Theater of his tyrannie. Wherefore he coniured him by the Loue of our Saviour, by the Pietie of his Ancestors, whose aides were neuer wanting when the Church stood in need, and by the fast tie of Filiall Obedience, that hee would enter into the Holy League of the Estates of Italy, who had made choice of him for their Generall. Jealousie, and Reuerence to the Sea of Rome so prevailed with Him, that hee easily condescended to the Popes request. Yet that he might

1512.

Warre with
France.

C

some

1512.

some way colour his action, hee would needs interpose himselfe as Vmpier betweene the Pope and the *French*, whom by his Embassadours hee entreates to lay aside armes: withall not obscurely threatning, that if he did not so, he intended to vndertake the defence of the Pope against him, the common disturber of the peace of Christendome. The *French* set light by this. Wherefore warre is proclaimed by a Herald, the *French* King commanded to part with the Kingdome of *France*, and the Duchies of *Normandie* and *Aquitaine*, which hee without right vniustly vsurped. Then entring into League with MAXIMILIAN the Emperour, the *Arragonois*, and the Pope, they consult of assaulting the *French* with ioint forces. The *Arragonois* invites vs into *Spaine*, that thence we might invade *France*, promising besides certaine troupes of Horse, store of Artillery, Waggon for carriage, Munition, and many other things necessary for such an Expedition. Our King relying on his Father in law his promises, levies a great Armie, whereof he ships one part for *Spaine*, and employes the other by Sea. EDWARD HOWARD Lord Admirall had charge of the Sea forces, who fought with the French Fleet in the Bay of *Bretaigne*. In which fight there was no memorable thing done, besides the combate of the two great ships (the one having seven hundred *English* in it vnder the command of Sir THOMAS KNEVET, the other nine hundred *French* vnder PRIMAVGET a *Briton*.) These ships being both fast grappled, after a long fight fell both on fire, and were vterly consumed, not a man being saved, of whom it might bee learned, whether this fire happened by chance, or were purposely kindled by a forced despaire. Our other Army vnder the command of the Lord THOMAS GRAY Marquis of *Dorset*, amongst ten thousand tall *English* souldiers had five hundred

*A fruitlesse
Voyage into
Spaine.*

1512.

hundred *Germanes* vnder one *G V I N T a Flemming*. This Armie landed in *Biscay*, where they spent some moneths in expectation of due performances from the *Arragonois*, who feeding them with promises only, tempered the heat of our men, who were very eager vpon the march for *France*. It hapned that *G A S T O N* of *Foix* Competitor for the Kingdome with *I O H N* King of *Navarre*, died about the same time. The *Navarrois* had promised *F E R D I N A N D* some aides toward this warre. But now fearing no Competitor; hee (whether out of inconstancie, or that he thought his affaires so required) secretly by his Agents makes a League with the *French*. Vpon this *F E R D I N A N D* turnes his Armes vpon the *Navarrois*, and straines all his strings to draw our men to the same attempt; but the Marquis of *Dorset* pleaded his Commission, beyond which hee could not with safetie proceed. The *Navarrois* was vtterly vnprovidid, and the Nobilitie so divided into the factions of the *Egremonts* and the *Beaumonts*, that he could doe nothing. It was brui- ted that two mighty Kings came against him with no lesse forces; what should hee doe? to hope from *France* were vaine; the *French* were too farre off, and deeply engaged in other warres. At the approach of the *Spaniard* hee quits his Kingdome, and with his Wife and Children flying over the *Pyrenean* moun- taines makes *Bearne* his receptacle. *F E R D I N A N D* having thus gotten a new Kingdome, casts off all far- ther thought of *France*, onely intending the confir- mation of his conquest; to which end hee intreates of *H E N R Y* the helpe of our forces raised for *France*, and prevailes: but to no purpose. For the *English* having their bodies inflamed with the into- lerable heate of a strange climate, and the drinking of strong wines, dropt downe every where, insomuch that we lost about a thousand (some say  eighteene

The Spani-
ard seizes
on Navarre.

1513.

hundred) men in an instant. Wherefore impatient of farther delay, they force their Commanders to set saile homeward. The King was mightily enraged at their returne, insomuch that hee once thought to haue punished them for their obstinacie: but the multitude of Delinquents proved a pardon to all. They did set forth in *May*, and returned a little before *Christmasse*.

Anno Dom. 1513. Reg. 5.

The Lord
Admirall
drowned.

ABout the beginning of this yeare the King assembled the high Court of Parliament, wherein war against *France* was determined, & a mighty masse of mony granted by the Commons. Whereupon in the very beginning of the spring a Fleet is set forth consisting of two and fortie men of warre, besides victuallers and lesser vessels. The Lord Admirall, who had the charge of this Fleet, too too eagerly hunting after honour, by his rashnesse frustrated the designes of so goodly preparations. Hee attempts to land in the haven neere adioyning to *Brest*, where striving in person to set foot first in the Enemies countrey, hee with a speare borne over board and drowned, was the only man of all that Fleet that came short home. He therein performed rather the part of a private Souldier, then of a Commander. For his death brought backe this headlesse Fleet into *England*. Where the King makes the Lord THOMAS HOWARD Admirall in the place of his deceased younger brother, exhorting him, by imploying his service for his Countries honour, to reuenge his brothers inglorious death. This new Admirall with great speed brings his Nauy out of harbour, and scouring

1513.

ring vp and downe the Seas strooke such a terrour into the *French*, that not so much as a fither boate durst peepe abroad. At last he lands in *Witland Bay*, ransacks all the Countrey thereabout, and without resistance returnes safe to his ships.

In the meane time the King having raised a mighty Army, arriveth at *Calais* the last of *June*, with a Fleet of foure hundred saile. The one and twentieth of *July* he marcheth with all his forces into the *French* Territorie, and having sent some Ensignes before to besiege *Terouenne* a Citie in *Picardie*, hee takes his way thither, intending in person to sit downe before it with all the strength of his Armie. By the way hee meets the *French* neere *Dernom*: They at first seeme resolved to fight: but whether they distrusted their owne strength, and so purposely declined an unequal combat, or (as by our side it is reported) that our Ordinance being conveniently placed disordered them, and that so they betooke themselves to flight, as if it had beene all one for vs to see them and conquer them, away they went, and could not any where afterward bee descried by vs. So without any let our Army came before *Terouenne*. This Citie had (according to the relation of our Writers) foure thousand defendants, whereof fixe hundred were horse. The place being so well fortified, it had beene no hard matter to haue defended it against a mighty Army, if so be they had beene accordingly provided of other necessities: but they were wanting. Wherefore they certified their King to what an exigent they were brought. But hee had his hands full else where. For the *Spaniard* had made an inroade into *Aquitaine* and *Navarre*; and the *Suisses* having lately overthrowne *Tremoville* at *Navarre*, had now coopt him vp in *Dyon* in *Burgoyne*; insomuch that his forces being by these occasions distracted, hee himselfe had not vnder

Terouenne
besieged.

1513.

vnder his Colours about twenty thousand Foot (the moiety whereof were *Lansquenets* vnder the command of the Duke of *Gueldres*) and two thousand five hundred Launces. With these he comes to *Amiens*, that the hope of succours, hee being so neere, might encourage the defendants. For it much concerned him that the siege should be drawne out at length. In our Army were forty thousand Foot, and five thousand Horse, so that there was no likelihood of doing any good against vs. Neither indeed did the *French* intend (especially at that time) to hazard the fortune of a battaile, the losse whereof in the iudgement of the more expert would haue beene accompanied with no lesse then the losse of the Kingdome, which would easily haue followed our victorie. The *French* King therefore sitting still at *Amiens*, least he might seeme to neglect such a Citie (the danger whereof did thoroughly grieue him) sends some troupes toward *Therouenne*, with instructions to put into the Citie eighty horsemen compleatly armed (but without horses, the besieged desiring no other aide) if possibly it could be effected, as it easily was by reason of the negligence of our Centinels. For indeed the desuetude of a long peace had made our men altogether vnapt for warre. But the indiscretion of the *French* farre surpassed our negligence. For whereas with the same hazard they might haue victualled the besieged, and furnished them with other necessities which they wanted; desiring (but too late) to amend this errour, they would needs effect it the same way as before. But our men had by this time raised a new Fortification to hinder their entrance, and had withall placed in ambush store of horse with fiftene thousand foot to cut them off in their retreat. The *French* came neere the walls, but finding all entrance debarred, returned without suspicion of any intended mischief. They

1513.

*The battaile
of Spurres.*

They had not gone farre, when some (as if they had beene out of their Enemies reach) impatient of the heate cast off their Helmes, some fell a drinking, most leaue their horses of service, and for their ease mount on little nags. Our men charge them vna-wares, and without any resistance made, put them to route. The *French* in this encounter lost three hundred horse: there were taken prisoners, LEWIS de LONGUEVILLE Marquis of Rotelin, BADI, CLERMONT d'ANIOV, BVSSY d'AMBOISE, BAYARD, la FAYET, and PALISSE (who escaped out of prison) with many others. It was then the opinion of most men, that this victory (if wee had but made, due vse of it) laid an easie way for vs to the conquest of *France*: For the *French* were so affrighted with the newes of this overthrow, that they thought of nothing but flying; and the King himselfe with teares in his eyes bewailing his hard fortune, cast about for some place of refuge, and determined to post into base *Bretaigne*. But wee looking no farther then *Therouenne*, brought our prisoners into the Campe, and without farther prysecution left the Enemies to their feares. The *French* call this *the Battaille of Spurres*, because they trusted more to their heeles, then their swords. The *Therouennois* after this overthrow despairing of succour come to a parley; and by the advice of their King, yeild vp the Citie the three and twentieth of *August*, vpon Condition, That the Souldiers might depart with Bagge and Baggage, Colours flying, and Drums beating: and the Citizens permittted to carrie away their goods.

*Terouenne
yeilded.*

A few dayes before the Citie was yeilded MAXIMILIAN the Emperour came to our Campe, and (which deserves to bee recorded to the eternall honour of our Nation) taking for pay a hundred Crownes

*Maximilian
the Emperor
serueth vn-
der King
Henry.*

1513.

Crownes a day, besides what was disbursed among his Souldiers, disdained not to serve vnder our Colours, wearing the Crosse of *England*, and a party coloured Rose, the vsuall Cognizance of our *English* warfare. But hee rather came to bee a Spectator, then a Partaker in the danger. Wherefore when hee saw into what straights our King was likely to driue the *French* being weake, if he would presse hard vpon him, and pierce farther into the Kingdome; although hee were a profest enemy to the *French*, yet was he iealous of our prosperous proceeding; and therefore by all meanes perswaded HENRY to dismantle Therouenne, and thence to proceed to the siege of Tournay: Hee blamed him (not without iust cause) for his late setting forth, Summer being first wel-neere spent: Winter was now at hand, when it would not quit cost to maintaine such an Armie, good designes being not then to bee put in execution: Hee told him that Therouenne was so farre from him, that it could not bee kept without great difficultie; therefore hee should doe well to dismantle it, that it might not hereafter serue for a Bulwarke to the Eenemy: That Tournay was a French Citie but (like an Island with the Sea) surrounded with Flanders and Hainault, and farre divided from the rest of France: True it was, that it was well stored with inhabitants, and not meanly fortified: but that there was no other Garrison, then of Citizens, and these hee should finde effeminate, and for provision, that they had none: Hee should therefore make speed and come on them vnawares, and with a few dayes siege force them to yeild: That the French King, if hee intended to succour them, must first march through all Henault, and passe over two or three great Riuers, amongst which were the Escaut and the Scarpe. That the Souldiers should finde good booties there, and the King himselfe the triumph of a most assured conquest: That

That the addition of such a Citie would bee no meane increase of his Dominions, and so much the lesse care to bee taken of it, for as much as it would bee as easie for him to keepe it in obedience, as it was for the French for the space of so many yeares to defend it, being placed amidst so many Enemies, that still had a greedie eye over it. King HENRY by this time had so much of Warre, that hee began to bee wearie of the toyle thereof, and to cast his minde on the pleasures of the Court. Wherefore (although hee wanted not Counsaillors for the best) hee followed the Emperours advice, as being the more easie. The Flemings (who begged it of the King) had leave to rase the walls of Therouenne, to fill the ditches, and to burne all the buildings except the Church, and the Chanons houses, which they (in regard of the dissensions vsuall to bordering Nations) very gladly performed.

Therouenne being thus taken and destroyed, away they march with all speed to *Tournay*, indevouring by their celeritie to prevent the same of their comming. But the Citizens suspecting some such enterprise, had fortified themselves as well as the shortnesse of time would permit them: and the Peasants thereabouts bring all their goods into the Citie, as to a place of safeguard. The Citie was of no great circuit, yet at the beginning of the siege it contained fourescore thousand people. By reason whereof victuals quickly began to faile them: and they could no way hope for reliefe. The French King was farre off, they had no Garison, the Citizens bad Souldiers, two great Princes had begirt the Towne with fiftie thousand men; but they had an Enemy within, called Famine, more cruell and insupportable, then both. So having for some few dayes held out the siege the nine and twentieth of

D

Sep-

1513.

The siege of
Tournay.Tournay
yeilded.

1513.

Wolsey Bi-
shop of
Tournay.

September their lives being granted them, they yeild, and to saue themselves from spoile pay a hundred thousand Crownes. The King makes them sweare Fealty to him, and appoints Sir EDWARD POYNINGS, a Knight of the Garter, their Governour. Next hee gives order for store of warlike provision, puts in a small Garison, and builds a Cittadell for the confirmation of his conquest. Neither amongst these politike affaires did he neglect those of the Church. For the Bishop being proscribed, hee conferres the Sea with all the revenues vpon THOMAS WOLSEY, of whose first rising and immoderate power we shall have much occasion to speake hereafter.

All things being thus ordered, because Winter came on apace, hee beganne to bethinke himselfe of returning with his Armie into England. This thought so farre pleased him, that having beene absent scarce foure monethes hee tooke ship, and about the end of October came home triumphing in the glory of a double conquest.

The King of
Scots slaine.

By the way hee was entertained with the newes of another victorie, the Lord HOWARD Earle of Surrey having vnder his Fortune slaine the King of Scots. The King of France being encumbred with many warres, had coniured JAMES the Fourth King of Scots by the ancient Lawes of Amitie, and the late League made betweene them, that Hee would not forsake him intangled in so many difficulties. If Hee regarded not his friends case, yet Hee should at least looke to himselfe, for whom it would not bee safe to suffer a bordering Nation, alwayes at enmitie with Him, by such additions to arise to that height of power. The King of England busied with a foraine warre was now absent, and with Him the flower of the English Chivalrie: Hee should therefore forthwith take Armes, and trie to recover Ber-

1513.

Berwicke an especiall towne of the Scottish Dominions, but for many yeares withheld by the English; He would easily be victorious; if He would but make vse of this occasion so happily offered. It could not be, but this warre would bee for His Honour, and profitable to His Friend, if not to Himselfe: He should thereby also make knowne to His Enemies, that the Scottish Armes were not to bee contemned; whose former victories a long, and (to them) hurtfull peace had obscured; and buried in oblivion among the English. As for the charges of it, Hee need not bee troubled, for that Hee would afford Him fiftie thousand Crownes towards the providing of Munition and Ordinance.

These reasons so preuailed with the yong King covetous of glory, that notwithstanding he had lately made a League with our King, whose Sister hee had married, and her vehement dissuasions, he proclaimed warre against HENRY, which proved fatal to him, bloudie to his, and the cause of many ensuing calamities. So having raised a great Armie, hee breakes into our Marches, and besiegeth Norham Castle belonging to the Bishop of Durham, the which having held out fixe dayes was at last yeilded vnto him. Thence hee removes his Campe to Berwicke, wasting all the Countrey as hee marcht with fire and sword. The newes whereof are brought vnto them, to whom the government of the Kingdome was committed in the absence of the King: and a leuy being made through all the North parts of the Kingdome, Alnewike is appointed the rendez-vous, where all the troupes should meete at a set day, that thence they might set forward against the Enemy vnder the conduct of the Lord THOMAS HOWARD Earle of Surrey. Among the first (to his Fathers great ioy) comes the Earles Sonne THOMAS Lord Admirall, leading a vete-

1513.

rane troupe of fivc thousand men of tried valour, and haughtie in regard of their former navall victories obtained vnder the command of this young Lord. After him came the Lords DACRES, CLIFFORD, SCROPE, LATIMER, CONTERS, LVMLEY, and OGLE, besides Sir NICHOLAS APPELYARD, Master of the Ordinance, Sir W. PERCIE, Sir WILLIAM SIDNEY, Sir WILLIAM BULMER, Sir IOHN STANLEY, Sir WILLIAM MOLINEUX, Sir THOMAS STRANGWAYES, Sir RICHARD TEMPEST, and many other Knights.

These sitting in Counsell thought it best to send an Herald to the King to expostulate with him concerning these out-rages committed: to complaine, that *He had without all right or reason spoyied the Countrey of a Prince not onely Allied vnto Him, but also His Confederate*, and therefore to certifie Him, that they were readie by battaile to revenge the breach of League, if so bee Hee durst awaite their comming but a few dayes in a ground that might be fitting for the meeting of both Armies. The King makes answer by writing, wherein *Hee retorts the violation of the League, calling God to witnesse, that King HENRY had first by his many iniuries showne evident signes of an alienated mind. For the English (Hee pretended) robbed all along the Marches of Scotland, without restitution or punishment: ANDREW BARTON a stout and honest man had beene vniustly slaine by the Kings command, and one HERON, who had murdered ROBERT CAR a Scottish Nobleman vaunted himselfe openly in England, the King taking no notice of so hainous a fact: Of these things Hee had often complained by his Embassadors, but without effect. There was therefore no other way for Him, but to betake Himselfe to Armes for the common defence of Himselfe, and his Kingdome, against*

the

the Kings iniustice. As for the meeting, hee signified that he accepted of it, and appointed both Time and Place for the battaile.

1513.

Flodden
field.

Neither partie failed the prefixed day. The Scot seekes to animate his men by taking away all hope of safeguard by flight, commanding them (I know not how wisely, but the event shewed how unhappily for thme) to forsake their horses, forasmuch as they were to trust to their hands, not to their horses heeles, and by his owne example shewing what hee would haue done, hee alights and prepares himselfe to fight on foote. The rest doing the like, the whole Army encountered Vs on foote, to whom after a long and bloody fight the fortune of the victorie inclined. The Scots had two and twentie Peeces of great Ordinance, which stood them in no steed. For our men climbing vp a hill where the Enemy sate hovering over Vs, the shot passed over our heads. Our chiefe strength were our Archers, who so incessantly played vpon foure wings of Scots (for the King diuided his Army into five Battalions) that were but lightly armed, that they forced them to flie and leave their fellowes, who yet stood stoutly to it. But the maine Battaile, where the King was, consisting of choice men, and better armed against our shot, was not so easily defeated. For the Scots, although they being inclosed as it were in a toyle were forced to fight in a ring, made most desperate resistance, and that without doubt so much the rather, because they not onely heard their King encouraging them, but saw him also manfully fighting in the foremost rankes, vntill having received wound vpon wound he fel down dead. They say there fell with him the Archbishop of Saint ANDREWS his naturall Sonne, two other Bishops, two Abbots, twelve Earles, seventeene Barons, and of common Souldiers eight thousand. The number of the Captives

1513.

tives is thought to haue beene as many. They lost all their Ordinance, and almost all their Ensignes : inso-much that the victorie was to bee esteemed a very great one, but that it was somewhat bloudie to Vs in the losse of fifteene hundred. This field was fought the ninth of *September* neere *Flodon* hill vpon a rising banke called *Piperdi*, not farre from *Bramston*.

I am not ignorant, that the *Scotish* Writers constantly affirme the King was not slaine in the field, but having saved himselfe by flight was afterwards killed by his owne people : and that the body which was brought into *England* was not the Kings, but of one *ALEXANDER ELFINSTON*, a young Gentleman resembling the King both in visage and stature, whom the King (that hee might delude those that pursued him, and might as with his owne Presence animate them that fought else-where) had caused with all tokens of Royaltie to be armed and apparelled like himselfe. But to let passe the great number of Nobilitie, whose carcases found about him sufficiently testifie, that they guarded their true King, and consequently that the counterfaite fought else-where: it is manifest that his body was knowne by many of the Captives, who certainly affirmed, that it could be no other then the Kings, although by the multitude of wounds it were much defaced. For his necke was opened to the midst with a wide wound, his left hand almost cut off in two places did scarce hang to his arme, and the Archers had shot him in many places of his body.

Thus was *JAMES* the Fourth King of *Scots* taken away in the flower of his youth, who truly in regard of his Princely Vertues deserved a longer life. For hee had a quicke wit, and a maiestickall countenance : he was of a great spirit, courteous, milde, liberall, and so mercifull, that it was observed hee was often

often forced against his will to punish offenders. These vertues endeared him to his people in his life time, and made them so much lament the losse of him being dead, that (as all Historians report) they seemed to have lost onely him in the whole succession of their Kings, which sufficiently argues the improbabilitie of the subiects pretended Parricide.

But he had not fallen into this misery, if he would haue hearkened to the advice of those, who perswaded him to have returned home before the fight contented with what hee had already performed in the expedition: that he should not vpon so weake forces hazard the estate of his Kingdome: hee had wonne glory enough, and abundantly fulfilled his friends request. But the *French* Agent, and some of the Kings Mignons corrupted by the *French* vrging to the contrarie, this haughtie Prince, even otherwise very desirous to give prooffe of his valour, was easily perswaded to awaite our great Forces already marching. His body (if at least that were his, & not *ELFINSTON*'s) being enclosed in Lead, and brought into *England* was by our Kings (I will not say cruell, but certainly inhumane) command cast in some by corner or other without due Funerall Rites, saying, that it was a due punishment for one who had periurously broken his

League, whereas if wee examine the premisses,

we shall find he wanted not probable

pretexts for what hee undertooke.

An.

1513.

1514.

*The descent
and honours
of the How-
ards.*

Anno Dom. 1514. Reg. 6.

THe next yeare having begunne his course, THOMAS HOWARD Earle of Surrey (hee who had beene victorious over the Scots) was created Duke of Norfolke, the title and dignitie of his Ancestors. JOHN his Father deriving his pedigree from THOMAS de Brotherton, Sonne to King EDWARD the First, the SEGRAVES and the MOWBRAYES (who had beene all Dukes of Norfolke) enioyed this Honour by right of Inheritance. But because in Bosworth field (where hee was slaine) hee tooke part with the Vsurper, both he and his Posteritie were deprived of that Honour. This THOMAS dying in the yeare 1524. his Sonne of the same name succeeded him, who deccased in the yeare 1554. His Sonne HENRY (a young Lord of great hopes) his Father then living was beheaded towards the end of this Kings Raigne. Hee left Issue THOMAS the last Duke of Norfolke (who also lost his head the yeare 1572.) and HENRY (at nurse when his Father died) a very learned and wise man, whom King JAMES (no good man repining thereat) created Earle of Northampton. THOMAS Duke of Norfolke had three Sonnes that survived him, PHILIP, THOMAS, and WILLIAM. PHILIP Earle of Surrey (and by his Mother, of Arundell) condemned the yeare 1589. and after dying in prison, left Issue THOMAS, then a little one, who by King JAMES his favour succeeded his Father in his Honors. His Vncle THOMAS out of the same fountaine of Royall Goodnes was created Earle of Suffolke, with addition of the dignity of Lord Chamberlaine Beside these, this Family hath CHARLES Earle of Nottingham Lord

1514.

Lord Admirall of *England*, Nephew by the Lord WILLIAM his father, to THOMAS Duke of *Norfolke*, that famous Triumpher ouer the Scots. This is he who in emulation of his grandfathers glory, in the yeare 1588. vnder the fortune of Queene ELIZABETH, most happily ouerthrew that vainely called *Inuincible Armada* of *Spaine*. THOMAS also Viscount *Bindon* is deriued from THOMAS Duke of *Norfolke*, by his sonne the Lord THOMAS. So this noble House lately afflicted, now gloriously flourishing, hath foure Earles and a Viscount, all braue and famous men, and of whom there will be occasion of much to be spoken hereafter: I therefore thought it good in brieft to set downe their Genealogie, lest I should trouble the Reader with too often reptition of their Race vpon each mention of the Name. At the time of this Dukes creation, others were also honored with new titles, CHARLES BRANDON made Duke of *Suffolke*, and CHARLES SOMERSET Earle of *Worcester*, and EDWARD STANLEY Lord *Mountegle*. Sir WILLIAM BRANDON Standard bearer to HENRY the seuenth in *Bosworth* field, and there slaine by the hand of RICHARD the Third, was father to this new Duke of *Suffolke*, of whose education (he then a little one) King HENRY hauing obtained the Crowne was verie carefull, and made him rather a companion than a seruant to the young Prince of whose household hee was. The Prince so greatly fauored him, partly for his fathers deserts, chiefly for his owne, that he being afterward King, created him Viscount *Lisle*, and intending (at least many were so perswaded) to giue him to wife the Ladie MARY his sister, who afterward was married to the King of *France*; thought it first good to honour him with the Duchie of *Suffolke*, which this yeare at the feast of *Candlemas* was performed. But

Charles
Brandon
Duke of
Suffolke.

E

how

1514.

Charles Somerset Earle
of Worcester.

how he was frustrated of his hopes, and afterward beyond all hope enjoyed her, shall be declared hereafter. SOMERSET the naturall sonne of HENRY of the House of Lancaster, the last Duke of Somerset, tooke his surname of his fathers Honour, whereas he should haue beene called BEAUFORT, or rather PLANTAGENET, according to the antient name of our English Kings. Hee being Couzen german to HENRY the Seuenth (whose mother was MARGARET Sister to the Duke of Somerset) and famous for his many vertues, of which that King was a quicke and exact Iudge, & was by him made L. high Chamberlaine of England. But hauing behaued himself very valiantly in this last expedition against the French (wherein GVICCIARDIN vntruly reporteth him to haue been slaine) HENRY the eighth added this new title, which his posteritie still inioues) to his antient honors. He was great grandfather by his son HENRY & nephew WILLIAM, to EDWARD the now Earle, who being one of his Maiesties most honorable priuy Counsel, & Lo. Priuy Seale, doth by his vertues much more ennoble his so noble Ancestors.

The French King hearing of the overthrow of the Scots, perceiuing himselfe deprived of such a friend & confederat, seeing his kingdom on fire about his ears, and none to relie vpon but himselfe, determined (if so he might fairely and with credit) to ^{renew} his League with vs. Pope IULIUS 2. the Incendiarie of Christendome was lately dead, and the French king himselfe was now a widower. He therefore intends to try whether by marrying the lady MARY the kings sister, he might secure himselfe from war on our side, and by so neere alliance gaine the assured friendship of so potent a Prince. LEO 10. succeeding IULIUS 2. did openly side with the French against the Spaniard. He therefore earnestly soliciting a reconciliation, a Peace was

Peace with
France.

con-

cluded profitable to the French, acceptable to vs, and on the 9 of October the nuptials were with great pompe solemnised. The French king was well stricken in yeres, his wife a tender virgin of some 16. or 18. yeares of age, but wonderfull beautifull. Besides the forementioned reasons, the desire of children (for he had no masse issue) on His part, on Her part ^{the good of} the publique weale, the authoritie of her brother so willing, and (which beares chiefeft sway in a womans heart) the supremacy of honor in the title of a Queen, were motiues to match so Vneuen a Paire. But many not without cause were perswaded, that she had rather haue made choice of BRANDON for her husband (so her power had been answerable to her wil) than the greatest Monarch in the world: neither was it long before she enioyed her desire. For the king (as it often happens to elderly men that apply theselues to yong womé, died the last of Febr. hauing scarce 3 months suruiued his wedding. The queene might then lawfully according to the articles of agreemét return into *England*, which she earnestly desiring, the Duke of *Suffolke* was sent to conduct her; who becomming a fresh suitor vnto her, so far easily preuailed, that before their departure from *Paris*, they were there priuatly married. The marriage was afterward by the kings consent celebrated at *Greenwich* the 13 day of *May* of the ensuing yeare.

And now we must speake something of VOLSEY's sudden and (for these our times) incredible rising, who hauing (as we haue related before) beene inuested in the Bishopricke of *Tournay*, was within the yeare preferred to two other Bishopricks. That venerable Bishop of *Lincolne* WILLIAM SMITH, was lately deceased, who beside many other monuments of his piety, hauing begun in *Oxford* a Colledge for students, called *Brasen nose* Colledge, was immatirely taken away before he could finish so good a work. So the Sea

1514.
The Ladie
Mary the
Kings sister
married to
Lewis 12.
K. of France.

Cardinal
Wolsey.

1514.

being vacant, it is conferred on W O L S E Y, now high in the Kings fauour. Hee was of verie meane parentage (a Butchers sonne) and *Ipſwich* (a towne in *Suffolke*, but of *Norwich* Diocesse) where hee afterward laid the foundation of a stately Colledge, was the place of his birth. He was brought vp at *Oxford*, in M A G D A L E N Colledge, and afterward became Master of the free Schoole thereto belonging. Among other schollers, the sonnes of the Marquis of *Dorset* were committed to his trust, and for his care ouer them, the Parsonage of *Limington* in *Somerſetſhire* (no verie meane one) was bestowed on him. As soone as he had set footing there, he was very disgracefully entertained by Sir A M I A S P O W L E T, who clap't him in the stockes, a punishment not vsually inflicted vpon any but beggars and base people. What the matter was that so exasperated him against W O L S E Y, a man not of least account, I know not: This I know, that W O L S E Y beeing afterward made Cardinall, and Lord Chancellor of *England*, so grieuously punished this iniurie, that Sir A M I A S P O W L E T was faine to dance attendance at *London* some yeares, and by all manner of obsequiousnesse to currie fauour with him. There remaines to this day a sufficient testimonie herof in a building ouer the gate of the middle Temple in *London*, built by the Knight at the time of his attendance there, & decked round about very sumptuously with the Cardinalls Armes, hoping thereby somewhat to alay the wrath of the incensed Prelate. But these things were long after this yere. W O L S E Y whether that hee could not brooke this disgrace, or bearing a minde that look't beyond this poore Benefice, left it, and became domestique Chaplaine to Sir I O H N N A F A N T Treasurer of *Calais*, by whose meanes hee was taken notice of by F o x Bishop of *Winchester*, a man that knew rightly how to iudge of good

1514.

good wits. He finding this young man to be verie sprightfull, of learning sufficient, and verie actiue in dispatch of affaires, so highly commended him to King H E N R Y the Seuenth, (who relied much vpon FOXES faith and wisdom) that hee thought it good forthwith to imploy him in affaires of great moment. What need many words? he so far pleased the King, that in short time he became a great man, and was first prefer'd to the Deanrie of Lincolne, and then made the Kings Almoner. But H E N R Y the Eighth a young Prince comming to the Crowne, was wholly taken with his smooth tongue and pliable behaviour. For when all the rest of his friends aduised Him to sit euerie day in person at the Counsell Table, that so by experience and daily practise He might reape wisdom, and to accustome Himselfe to the managing of affaires of Estate: W O L S E Y aduised Him to follow His pleasures; saying, *That His youth would not be able to brooke their tedious Consultations: euerie Age of man had its Seasons, and Delights agreeable. They did not do well, that would force the King to act an Old Man before His time, Youth being vtterly auerse from wrinckled Seueritie. It would come to passe hereafter, if God were so pleased, that what was now troublesome to him, would not be disagreeable to riper Yeares, nay prooue perhaps a great pleasure. Vntill that time came, He should enioy the present, and not by hearkening to others needlesse persuasions, any way interrupt the course of that felicitie which the largenesse of His Dominions would easily affoord Him. He should hawke and hunt, and as much as Him list vse honest recreations. If so bee Hee did at any time desire suddenly to become an Old Man by intermedling with Old Mens Cares, He should not want those (meaning himselfe) that would in the evening in one or two wordes relate vnto Him the effect of a whole daies Consultation.* This speech hitting so pat with the Kings humour, made W O L S E Y so powerfull, that

1514.

whereas the King before fauored him as much as any other ; he onely was now in fauour with and next the King , with whome there was nothing to bee done but by him. For he was the man that was made choice of, who like another M E R C V R Y should passe betweene this our I O V E, and the Senate of the lesser Gods, offering their petitions to Him, and to them returning his pleasure therein. Wherefore he was euen at the first sworne of the Priuie Counsell, and besides the late collation of *Tournay*, vpon the death of S M I T H he was also made Bishop of *Lincolne*. In the gouernement of which Church he had not fully spent six moneths, before he was translated from *Lincolne* to the Archbishopricke of *Yorke* then vacant by the death of Cardinall B A M B R I D G E at *Rome*. Shortly after, (that I may at once shew all his honors) W I L L I A M W A R H A M Archbishop of *Canterburie* leauing the place, he was by the King made Lord Chancellor of *England*, and by the Pope Legate *à latere*. Yet he stayed not there, but as if the Archbishopricke of *Yorke*, and the Chancellorship of *England* had not beene sufficient to maintaine the port of a Cardinall, besides many other liuings he procured of the King the Abbey of *Saint Albanes*, and the Bishopricke of *Bath* and *Wells*. And not content with these, leauing *Bath* and *Wells*, he addeth the Bishopricke of *Durham* to that of *Yorke*, and then leauing *Durham* leazeth on *Winchester* at that time of greatest reuenue of any Bishopricke in *England*. You now see W O L S E Y in his height, rich, his Princes Fauourite, and from the bottom raised to the top of Fortunes wheele. What became of him afterward you shall know hereafter.

Anno

1515.

Anno Dom. 1515. Reg. 7.

THe League lately made with L E W I S the French King, was confirmed by F R A N C I S his Successor, and published by Proclamation in *London*, the ninth day of *Aprill*.

Anno Dom. 1516. Reg. 8.

BUt the French King hauing taken into his protection the young King of Scots, sent I O H N S T V -
A R T Duke of *Albanie* in^{to} *Scotland* to be Gouvernour both of the kings Person and kingdome. The first thing this Duke vndertook, was, either to put to death or banish those, whom he any way suspected to fauor the English. Insomuch, that the Queene Dowager (who by this time was married to A R C H I B A L D D O V G L I S Earle of *Agus*) forced to saue herselfe by flight, came into *England* to her Brother, with whom she stayered at *London* a whole yeare, the Earle her husband after a moneth or two without leaue returning into *Scotland*. King H E N R Y being displeased at these French practises, deales vnderhand with the Emperour MAXIMILIAN (with whome the French then contended for the Dutchie of *Milane*) and lends him a great summe of money, whereby he might hire the Suisses to aid him in the expelling the French out of *Italie*. But the Emperour, although he had leuied a sufficient Armie, returned home without doing any thing. He was indeed accompted a wise Prince, but unhappy in the managing of his affaires: whether it were that Fortune waiwardly opposed him, or that he was naturally slow in the execution of his wel plotted designs.

1516.
*A breach
with France.*

1516.

signes. But shortly after hee intendes a second triall of his Fortune. Wherefore by his Embassadour the Cardinall of *Switzerland*, hee yet borowes more mony of the King, which was deliuered to certaine Merchants of *Genua* to bee by a set day payed to the Emperour in *Italie*. But they, whether corrupted by the *French*, or not of sufficient abilitie to make returne, deceiued him; and so his second signes vanished also into Aire. I doe not thinke it was the Kings fault, although wee might iustly suspect, that the great treasure left him by his Father beeing almost spent, and the *French* secretly offering peace vpon good termes, the friendship betweene him and the Emperour, which hee had so dearly purchased, began at length to grow cold. Certainly (to speake nothing of the League which was afterwards concluded with *France*) the Tresurie was now growne so bare, that the King was driuen to inuent new wayes for the raising of money. The care of this businesse (as almost of all others) was committed to Cardinall *WOLSEY*, who casting vp the Exchequer accompts, found many deeply indebted to the King; and (whither by the negligence or treacherie of the Officers) neuer yet called to accompt. Among others, the Duke of *Suffolke* was found to be a great debtor, who besides his own reuenues, receiued yerely out of *France* his wifes ioincture amounting to 60000 crownes. Yet notwithstanding he was faine to withdraw himselfe from Court, that by liuing thriftily in the countrey, he might haue wherewith to pay his debt. The Cardinal next bethinks himselfe of publicke misdemeanors of what sort soeuer: as periury, rapes, oppression of the poore, riots, and the like: the offenders without respect of degree or persons, hee either publicquely punished in bodie, or set round fines on their heads. By which means the Tresurie

surie (before empty) was replenished, and the Cardinall by the people much applauded for his Iustice. These things hauing thus succeeded to his minde, he vndertakes more in the same kinde. He institutes a new Court, where the Lords of the Priuie Counsell, with other of the Nobility should sit as Iudges. The aforesaid crimes, which then greatly rained in this Kingdome, were punishable in this Court, which (as I coniecture) from the stars painted in the roofe is called the *Star-chamber*. He erected also the Court of *Requests*, where the complaints of the Poore were to be heard; and ordained many other things in the ciuile gouernment of the Kingdome, that were acceptable to the people, and are in vse at this day, wherein hee alike manifested his wisdom and loue of his Countrey. Certainly they that liued in that age, would not sticke to say, That this Kingdome neuer flourished more, than when WOLSEY did, to whose wisdom they attributed the wealth and safetie that they enioyed, and the due administration of Iustice to all without exception.

1516.

The Starre-chamber

and

The Court of Requests instituted by Wolsey.

Anno Dom. 1517. Reg. 9.

1517.

THe Spring growing on, the feare of a commotion in *London* increased with the yeare. The originall and successe whereof I will lay open at large, forasmuch as enormities of this nature, by our wholesome Lawes seuerely restrained, are so rare, that I remember, when I was a childe, old men would reckon their age from this day, by the name of *Ill May day*. Long peace hauing with vs begate plentie the Mother and Nurse both of good and bad Arts, allured the most excellent artificers of foreine Nations to partake of our happinesse, by frequenting the

Ill May day.

1517.

Citie of *London*. But the giddie multitude not concei-
 uing what good became of communicating their
 skill vnto vs, tooke it verie hainously, that Strangers
 should be permitted to enioy the priuiledges of the
 City; and our home-bred Artificers did most especi-
 ally complaine, That their meanes were euery day
 curtalled, forasmuch as no small part was necessarily
 to be defalked for the maintenance of these Stran-
 gers. This was now growne the common discourse,
 and had gon so far, that one *L I N C O L N E* a ring-lea-
 der of this tumultuous rout, did not stick to persuade
 some Preachers, publicuely in the Pulpit to lay open
 these common grieuances before the Estates of the
 Realme. Our Ladies Hospitall in *London*, commonly
 called the *Spittle*, is famous for the *Easter Sermons*;
 one of which was to be preached by Doctor *HENRY*
STANDISH (afterward Bishop of *S. Asaph*) a graue and
 learned man. *L I N C O L N E* had assailed him, and had
 the deniall, as in a matter, the very mention whereof
 a good Patriot should abhorre. But Doctor *B E L L A*
Diuine, who was after *S T A N D I S H* to preach in the
 same Place, without feare or wit seconding their sedi-
 tious attempts, did publicuely in his Sermon read the
 Bill by them exhibited to him, taking for his text that
 of the Prophet in the 115 Psalme: *The heauens, euen the*
heauens are the Lords; but he hath giuen the earth to the
sonnes of men: Thence most foolishly concluding, that
England was giuen to Englishmen only, and that ther-
 fore it was not to be endured, that Aliens should en-
 ioy any part therof. Many things by him spoken to
 this purpose, were accepted with great applause and
 approbation of the Vulgar, who out of extreame ha-
 tred to Strangers, breathed nothing but sedition. And
 to adde more fuell to this fire, it happened that many
 outrages were about that time committed by some of
 these Strangers. This euill then thus spreading it selfe,
 for-

1517.

forainers were euery where ill intreated, and commonly knockt downe in the streets, hauing not offered iniurie to any man. The authors of these riots being by the L. Maior committed to prison, a sudden rumor ran through the Citie, That on *May* day next all Strangers should be massacred. This without doubt proceeded from some of this unruly crue, and was intended as a watchword to all the faction; but the Strangers made so good vse of it, that they had all withdrawne themselves before that time, and the Magistrates very carefully attended each occasion, endeavouring to crush all tumultuous designs in the shell. On *May* day Eue therefore (the next day being the feast of the Apostles *Philip* and *Iacob*, the solemnitie thereof is vsually augmented by the liberty granted to the younger sort to sport themselves and to make merrie) the Citizens in generall are by Proclamation commanded to keepe fast their doores, and to restraine their Seruants from going abroad vntill nine of the clocke the next day. But before this had beene thoroughly proclaimed, an Alderman walking in the streets, saw a troupe of young men consisting of Apprentices and such like gathered together, and playing at cudgels. He sharply reprooued them for not obeying the Kings Edict, withall threatening to punish them, if they the sooner betooke not themselves euery one to his home. Words not preuailing, he laid hold on one or two, intending to haue committed them. But what reckoning they made of Authoritie, their resistance in rescue of their Companions shewed; and by outcries giuing an Alarme, drew together all the rest of their Faction in that quarter of the Citie. The fame of this burly-burly encreased their numbers, by sending mariners, gentlemens seruants, beggars, & Citizens,

1517.

but the greatest part were Apprentices. Sedition like a torrent carried them headlong, and animated them to all villanie. They breake open the prisons, set those at libertie, that were imprisoned for their outrages on straungers, flie about the Citie as in a whirle-wind, rob all forreiners houses, and not content with their goods, seeke after them for their liues. They found their nests, but the birds were fled. Hauing thus spent the night, in the morning hearing the Kings forces to approach, most of them slipt away, onely some three hundred remained (whereof eleuen were women) and being apprehended, supplied their places, whom they before had freed. They were all arraigned, onely thirteene designed for death, whereof, nine suffered on diuers gibbets purposely erected in diuers parts of the Citie. LINCOLNE, SHERWIN, and two brethren named B E T S, Chiefetaines in this sedition, were carried to Cheap side, where LINCOLNE was deservedly hanged. The Executioner readie to turne off another, was preuented by the Kings gracious Pardon. The minde of man beeing prone to pittie, wee may imagine, that others were well pleased at the newes; but certainly the condemned had cause to reioice. The Queenes of *England*, the two Dowagers of *France* and *Scotland* (both of them the Kings Sisters, and then at Court) became incessant Petitioners to his Maiestie, and that on their knees, in the behalfe of these condemned persons: and at length, W O L S E Y consenting (by whome the King was wholly swayd) their Petitions were graunted to them, and to the poore men their liues. This was the last scene of this tragicall tumult, the like whereof this well gouerned Citie had not knowne in manie ages. For the Lawes verie well provided in that case, do vnder a great penaltie forbid Assemblies,

blics, especially of armed men, if not warranted by publicke Authoritie.

In *August* and *September* the sweating sicknesse (termed beyond Sea, *Sudor Anglicus*, or the *English sweat*) began, a disease vtterly vnknowne to former ages. Of the common sort they were numberlesse, that perished by it. Of the Nobilitie, the Lords CLINTON, and GREY of *Wilton*. The symptoms and cure you may finde in *Polydore Virgill* (in *Anno* 1. HENR. 7.) who (as confidently, as I belecue truely) maintaines, That, this disease was neuer till then knowne to bee, much lesse to bee mortall. As if there were a concatenation of euills, one euill feldome commeth alone. A Pestilence succeeded this former mortalitie, and so raged the whole Winter season in most parts of the Realme, that the King for feare of infection, attended by a few, was faine euery day to remoue his Court from one place to another.

The eleuenth of *Februarie* was borne the Ladie MARY, afterwards Queene of *England*.

1517.

The sweating sicknesse.

Anno Dom. 1518. Reg. 10.

1518.

THE Peace so long treated of betweene vs and the *French* was now in *September* at length concluded on these Conditions:

Peace with France.

That the DAVLPHIN should marrie the Ladie MARIE the Kings only Childe, and not yet two yeares old: That Tournay should bee restored to the French: That the French should pay King HENRY foure hundred thousand Crownes, viz. two hundred

1518.

dred thousand for his charge in building the Cittadell, for the Artillerie, Powder, and Munit on, which hee should leaue there and other two hundred thousand crownes, partly for the expence of that warre, wherein the Citie was taken, and partly in regard of other Pensions that were due vnto him.

For the paiment of which summes, the French gaue eight hostages ; so saith BELLAY. But our Writers speake of a farre different summe, viz. Six hundred thousand crownes for the Citie, and foure hundred thousand crownes for the Cittadell : besides three and twenty thousand pounds Tournois, which the City of Tournay ought the King: and an annual Pension of a thousand Markes assigned to Cardinall WOLSEY for renouncing all claime and title to the Bishopricke of Tournay. For the confirmation of these Articles, the Earle of Worcester, and the Bishop of Ely, with some others, were sent into France, where both by the King and Princes of the Realme they were magnificently entertained.

1519.

Anno Dom. 1519. Reg. 11.

The death of
the Emperor
Maximilian.

THis yeare on the twelfth of Ianuarie in the three and sixtieth yeere of his age, died the Emperor MAXIMILIAN, hauing to preuent a disease, to which hee thought himselfe inclining, vnseasonably taken a Medicine of vncertaine operation. His death bred an equall desire in the mindes of two great Princes, who became Competitours for the Empire, FRANCIS King of France, and CHARLES King of Spaine. But CHARLES,

CHARLES, although King of *Spaine*, yet being by birth (borne at *Gand*) and discent a German, at the age of nineteene yeares was chosen Emperour of *Germanie*, with the full consent and iustifications of all the Princes Electors. This Election, how euer other slight matters were pretended, was vndoubtedly the cause of the ensuing dreadfull war betweene these Princes. The French King taking this repulse impatiently, meditates nothing but reuenge. And that his designes might no way be crossed by vs, he labors amain for the confirmation of the peace lately agreed vpon betweene HENRY and him. Therefore by the Admirall BONIVET he deales with WOLSEY, that at an enteruiew betweene the two Kings, the League might be ratified. To this end HENRY intends to come to *Guifnes*, FRANCIS to *Ardres*, and a conuenient place betweene both is made choice of for their enteruiew.

1519.

Anno Dom. 1520. Reg. 12.

1520.

Hereupon the King setting forward towards *France*, by easy iourneis comes to *Canterbury*, intending there to keepe his Whitson tide. The next day after being the twenty sixth of *May*, the new created Emperor CHARLES the fifth in his return from *Spaine* arriues at *Douer*, distant twelue miles from *Canterbury*. The King gladly entertaines the newes, and although it were midnight, takes horse, and within little more than an houre comes by torch light to *Douer* Castle, where the Emperour lay; who sea-weary was then asleepe. But being certified of the Kings arriual, hee suddenly apparelled himselfe, and met the King at the top of the staires. They embraced and saluted one another, they long conferred together, and the next morning (beeing Whitson day) they rode together to *Canterburie*, the

*The Empe-
rour Charles
the Fifth in
England.*

Canterburie.

1520.

the Emperour alway keeping the right hand, and the Earle of *Derby* bearing the Sword before them both. *Canterburie* is a Citie more famous for antiquitie, than for moderne beauty. To let passe, that it was about a thousand yeares since made an Archiepiscopall See, our Chronicles do sufficiently testify, that both in respect of priuate mens faire houses, and the magnificent structure of it's Churches, it antiently excelled the brauest cities of *England*. But within these few yeares it hath lost so much of it's greatnesse and beautie, that a man shall finde little of *Canterburie* beside the name. Why it should so much in so short space decay, many reasons may be alledged: As the vicinity of *London*, which swelling like the spleene, suckes both bloud and moisture from all the other languishing Cities of the Kingdome. Likewise the subuersion of Saint AUGUSTINES Monasterie, the losse of *Calais*, and the pulling downe of Archbishop BECKET his Shrine, things which occasioned a great concourse of people, and did by their losse and ouerthrow much impaire this Cities splendor. One only Ornament therof suruiues, which is the Cathedral and Metropolitall Church, with such a Maiesty piercing the skies (saith ERASMVS) that it a far off fills the beholder with deuout amazement. This Church being at first dedicated to our Sauour CHRIST, a few ages past degenerated into the nickname of S. THOMAS. This THOMAS surnamed BECKET, hauing obstinately opposed HENRY the second, was in this Church slain by certaine soldiers: and being afterward canonized for a Saint, his sepulchre mightily encreased the glory of the place. For from those times euen almost to our dayes, all sorts of people from all parts of *Europe*, superstitiously frequented the Shrine of this vpstart Saint, with rich oblations indeuoring to procure his fauor. Hence the Monastery was so enriched, that of it
and

1520.

and the Church E R A S M U S said, *That euery place was enlightened with the lustre of most pretious and huge stones, and the Church throughout abounded with more than Royall Treasure.* But the Shrine especially, that contained the reliques of this Saint, was so embossed with jewels, that gold was the meanest thing about it. Hither accompanied with King H E N R Y, came the Emperor C H A R L E S, but whether out of deuotion or curiositie, I cannot say. But this is certaine, that the Cardinall and the Clergie going in procession, to the Church they went directly, where a great deale of time was spent in Ceremonious worship, and ablations at B E C K E T S T o m e, not onely by the Emperour, but euen by Him, who shortly after defaced the Monument, and seised vpon that infinite Treasure, heaped vp by the deuout follie of many preceding ages. From the Church they went to the Archbishops Palace, where the Queene, Aunt to the Emperour, awaited them, and very ioyfully welcomed her Nephew. Three dayes were spent in banketing & pastimes, and then the Emperour went to his Nauy at *Sandwich*, the King and Queene to *Do-uer*, from whence they passed to *Calais*, that the intended interuiew of the two Kings might worke it's due effects. The seuenth of *Iune* was the appointed day. The place, betweene *Ardres* and *Guisnes*. There the two Kings mounted on Spanish Gennets, attended by such a multitude of Nobilitie, as the occasions of a hundred yeres before had not at once brought together the like, incountred each other, both in the floure of their age, the goodliest Princes of the world, and most expert in all kinde of combates both on horse and foot. It were needlesse to set forth the magnificence of these Princes, when the brauerie of their attendants was such, that the place was thence named *The golden campe*. Hauing embraced each other on

G

horse-

*Interview
betwixt the
Kings of
England and
France.*

1520.

horseback, they alight and betake themselves to a Pavilion there purposely pitched: HENRY attended on by the Cardinall of Yorke, and the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolke; FRANCIS by the Admirall BONIVET, the Chancellour du PRAT, and some other Counsellors. Having had familiar conference concerning some priuate matters, they gaue order for erecting a Theater, and enclosing a ground for a Tilt-yard, that so they might solace themselves, whiles their Counsell treated of grauer matters, the conclusion whereof they might at leisure euery day know by relation. Fourteene dayes these Princes gaue each other the meeting, with great concourse of most famous soldiers. HENRY then entertained the French King at *Guisnes*, in a house made of timber (framed partly in *England*, partly in *Holland*, and thence brought thither) wherein there were foure Mansions: The out side was couered with cloth so painted, that it would haue deceiued the beholders for squared stone: the in side was hung with most rich Arras, so that it euery way seemed a most artificiall and stately Building. The forme of it was much like that of the Exchange at *Calais*. It being afterward taken asunder, was transported into *England*, and so stood the King in little or nothing, saith BELLAY. (Whereas wee know, and that by Records, that there were sent ouer out of *England* for this Worke, three hundred Masons, six hundred Carpenters, two hundred Painters, Glasiers, and other Artificers (in all eleuen hundred) which for the space of two moneths laboured continually on this fabricke.) The day ensuing, the French King prepares a banquet: the banqueting house was a Canopy euery way extended sixtie foot, which without was couered with cloath of Tissue, within with blew velvet pouldred with golden floures *de Lys*. At each corner was a Pavilion of the same workes: the
cords

1520.

cords were of blew silke twisted with gold of Cyprus, which was of great esteeme. But a most impetuous and tempestuous winde broke asunder the cords, and laid all this brauerie in the dirt: *Patience per force*. The French King suddenly makes another banquetting house, in that place where there is now a Fort that takes it's name from this banquet. The preparations were extraordinary, and the magnificence outstripped the reach of humane iudgement. There wanted neither houses, woods, nor fields for disport; for many men brought them entire on their backes. But pleasures must haue their intermission, and Kings if not by their Greatnesse, are by their Affaires seuered. HENRY therefore returnes to *Calais*, and FRANCIS to *Boloigne*. The tenth of the ensuing moneth, the King gallantly attended, visited the Emperour at *Graveling*. The Emperour in requitall accompanied him backe to *Calais*. Shewes and banquets are Princes vsuall entertainments. To this end, the King so commanding, a round building is made in the forme of an Amphiteatre, eight hundred foot in compasse. The sides were of planks: in the middle was a pillar made of eight great masts tied together. This pillar supported the weight not onely of the roofe of the whole fabricke, (whither as into a lower Heauen the Moone and Stars had descended) but Organs also, and places for the receipt of all sorts of musicke in abundance. These places were adorned with tapestrie, statues, and curious pictures, insomuch that the most fault finding could not complaine of any want in that kinde. All things were now prepared for the entertainment of such a guest, and the banquet readie to be serued in, when the same mischance that befel the French Canopy, made our English Heauen and Earth meet together. God, as dis-

G 2

pleased

Henry visits
the Emperour
at Graveling

1520.

pleased with the mad prodigality of these two Kings, sent a tempest, the violence whereof scattered this counterfeit heaven, blew out about a thousand wax tapers, defaced the glorious thrones prepared for these Princes, frustrated the expectation of the people, and forced the King to the necessitie of another place. But to let passe the tilting, maskes, and gorgeous feasts during the six dayes the Emperor staid at *Calais*: In these seuerall interviewes betweene all these Princes there was no one serious thing done, but this, that a firme Peace, a perpetuall League, & faithfull Friendship seemed to be concluded on all sides. For who would haue thought, that it had been possible for discord it selfe to haue dissolved this knot, where CHARLES & FRANCIS attributed so much to HENRY, that they made him Vmpier of all controuersies that should arise betweene the? But that there is seldom any heed to be giuen to the Agreements of Princes, where they are tied by no other bands (as of Religion, Affinity, or manifest Vtility) than that weake one of their plighted Troth, those foule dissentions, and bloudy wars which afterwards rent all Christendome, and opened a way for that cōmon enemy of our Faith, may be a sufficient example. The Emperor after all these passages of courtesy & humanity, departs toward *Graueling*, mouēd on a braue horse couered with a footcloth of cloth of gold, richly beset with stones which the King had giuen him. He would often speak of his Aunts happinesse, that was matcht to so magnificent a Prince. The King staid some few days after at *Calais*, from whence passing to *Douer*, he with all his traine arriued safe at *London*. I cannot but enuy their happines who in so little time saw 3 the mightiest Monarchs in Christendom, who for their exploits, & the great alterations happening vnder each of the, will without doubt be famous through all succeeding Ages.

Anno Dom. 1521. Reg. 13.

1521.

*The Duke of
Buckingham
accused of
treason.*

EDWARD STAFFORD Duke of *Buckingham* was about this time atraigned of high Treason. He was discended of a Family, which whether it was more antient or noble, is questionable. He deriued himself by a direct line frō ROBERT *de Stafford*, to whom WILLIAM the Conquerour gaue large revenues, which his posterity greatly enlarged, by matching with the heires female of many noble Families. By the Lady ANNE daughter to THOMAS of *Woodstocke* Duke of *Glocester*, who was Brother to EDWARD the Third, hee participated of the Bloud Royall. The first honourable title of the Family was of Lord *Stafford*, the next of Earle of *Stafford*, as was EDMUND, that married the daughter to THOMAS of *Woodstocke*. HUMFREY son to EDMUND was created Duke of *Buckingham* by HENRY the Sixt, who left that Honor to his son HUMFREY who was grandfather to this EDWARD by his son HENRY the third Duke. How HENRY assisted the Vsurper RICHARD the Third, in oppressing EDWARD the Fifth, how he after conspired with the Earle of *Richmond* (afterwards HENRY the Seuenth) against the Vsurper, but was cut off by the Tyrant before he could bring any thing to passe; the histories of those times declare. EDWARD his son restored to Bloud & Dignities by HENRY vij. for his descent, wealth, and Honors, inferior to none but the King, not content with this, was by N. HOPKINS a Charterhouse Monke induced to beleue that Heauen had decreed to cut off K. HENRY, after whose death he should raigne, and the Crowne be for euer established on his posterity. This the Monke affirmed, God the Gouvernour of all things, had reuealed vnto him. He further aduised him by liberality and cur-

1521.

curtesy to win the minds of the people, for the time was at hand wherein this should certainly come to passe, if it were not through his owne default. The Duke (no sot, but blinded by ambition) gaue such credit to the Monke, who was either mad, or else flattered him in hope of reward, that although the time prefixed for these miracles were past, yet was he still in hope, fed the Imposter with gifts, who fed him with aire, secretly vilified the King, and gaue profusely to all. Nay he could not forbear, but at length he must brag of the Iuglers promises, as hee did to a gentleman named CHARLES KNEVET, to whom he boldly vnmasked himselfe, and gaue a reason of his actions. Vpon KNEVETS accusation he was arraigned, & condemned the thirteenth of May, and on the seuenteenth publicquely beheaded. His death was lamented by many, & the rather for that he was no way faulty, but in his vanity and pride, which ouerthrew him. Being a childe, I haue heard antient men say, that by his brauery of apparel, and sumptuous feasts he exasperated the King, with whom in these things he seemed to contend. But he could by no meanes beare with the intollerable pride of the Cardinall, whose hatred not improbably prooued fatall vnto him, rather than did the Kings displeasure: for many times Princes are with lesse danger offended, than their Mignons. There goes a tale, That the Duke once holding the basen to the King, the Cardinall when the King had done, presently dipped his hands in the same water: the Duke disdaining to debase himselfe to the seruice of a Priest, shed the water in his shoos. The Cardinall therewith incensed, threatned him, That *he would sit vpon his skirts*. The Duke to shew that hee slighted his threats, & withall, that the King might take notice of the Cardinalls malice, came the next day

1521.

day to Court, richly (as he vsually was) apparelled, but without skirts to his dublet. The King & many others demanding what he meant by that strange fashion, he answered readily, *That it was done by way of preuention, for the Cardinall should not now sit vpon his skirts.* Hee thought he had put a jest vpon the Cardinal, to whose informations, as proceeding from enuy and spleen, he hoped the King would hereafter giue the lesse credit. But he missed his marke: for most men were of opinion, that the Cardinalls malice crushed him rather, than did the weight of his owne offences. It was the saying of CHARLES the Emperor, vpon the report of his death, *That the Butchers Dog had killed the fairest Hart of England* Howsoeuer it came to passe, the king who had hitherto ruled without bloudshed, induced by the former reasons (so the Records run) permitted his hands to be stained with the bloud of this poore Prince; many lamenting, that the indiscreet credulity of one man, hauing not attempted ought against the Estate, should be the ouerthrow of so noble a Family. If I might lawfully pry so far into Gods iudgements, which are indeed inscrutable, I would be bold to impute the punishment of the Sonneto to the Fathers treachery, who conspired with the Vsurper against his lawfull Prince EDW. 5. who by his assistance was de- priued of his life and kingdome. But forasmuch as that being touched in conscience, hee manifestly repented this fact (for seeking to oppresse the Tyrant, whom he himselfe had raised, he perished miserably) the Diuine iustice (I thinke) so far regarded his repentance, that his posterity are neuerthelesse Peeres of the Realme, by the title of L. Stafford. *The first point of wisdom is, not to run into error; the next, quickly to amēd it.*

The King hauing written a booke against MARTIN LUTHER, sent it as a Present to Pope LEO the Tenth. This LEO, not yet thirty eight yeares old, was
by

King Henry
writeth a-
gainst Luther

1521.

by the combination of the Iunior Cardinalls elected Pope. In which dignity hee behaued himselfe according to his yeares, profusely spending the treasures of the Church in hawking and hunting, and other pleasures not deemed ouer honest. Need began at length to pince him, and money must be had. Whereupon he resolues to make vse of his Keyes, against the most subtill lockes, and strongest bars, euer yet held preuallent. Indulgences of all sorts, without distinction of time or place, must now publicquely be set to sale. Saint Peters Church (this was the pretence) was out of re-
 paire, towards which a certaine summe of money giuen, would purchase pardon of sinnes, not onely for the Liuing, but for the Dead also, whose soules should thereby bee redeemed from the paines of Purgatorie. But whatsoeuer was pretended, euery one palpably saw, that these Pardons were granted to get money for his owne reliefe. And forasmuch as the Commissioners demanded it after an impudent and shamelesse manner, they in most places incurred the dislike and indignation of the people, especially in *Germany*, where they saw this facultie of redeeming soules from Purgatory, was either solde for little or nothing, or played away in their Tauernes. But what speake I of the Commissioners? That which made the *Germans* most impatient, was, that the heedlesse Pope had giuen to his sister M A G D A L E N the profit of the exactions of Indulgences in many parts of *Germany*, and that so openly, that euery one must needs know it. For all *Germany* spake it, that this money was not gathered for the Pope or the Treasurie of the Church (whereby peraduenture some part of it might be employed to good vses) but was exacted to satisfie the greedinesse of a woman. At that time liued M A R T I N L U T H E R a Doctor of Diuinity, and an *Augustine* Monke, one who vnder a religious Habit, did

Luthers departure from
 the Church
 Rome.

1521.

did not consecrate himselfe to idlenesse, but to God. It is reported, how truly I know not, that recreating himselfe in the fields, his companion with whom he then discoursed, was suddenly stricken dead with thunder. He therupon falling into due consideration of the vncertaintie of death, and of iudgment, left the study of the Ciuill Law, to which he then applied himselfe, and renouncing the world, betooke himselfe to a Cloister, where for his deportment he was beyond exception, for learning (especially diuine) he was scarce matchable. Vpon this horrible abuse of the authority of the Keyes, being inflamed with a pious zeale, he could not containe himselfe, but boldly and bitterly inueighed against this grosse impiety. Neither staid he there, but (storme the Pope neuer so much) proceeds to other enormities in the Church of *Rome*, some whereof that Church hath since reformed, the rest religious Princes, by LVTHER awakened out of their dead sleepe of superstition, notwithstanding the practises of *Rome*, haue (God be thanked) exploded. New opinions (especially in matters of Religion) are of themselves alwayes odious. HENRY being offended with LVTHERS new (as the world then deemed them) Tenets, thought it would proue to his honor, by writing against LVTHER, to manifest his learning and pietie to the world. Herupon vnder his name a book was set forth, better beseeming some antient and deep Diuine, than a youthfull Prince (whom although he earnestly endeauoured it, yet his affaires would not permit to bury himselfe among his books) which many thought to haue beene compiled by Sir THO. MOORE, some by the Bishop of *Rocheſter*, and others (not without cause) suspected to be the worke of some other great Scholler. Whosoever writ it, LVTHER replied in such sort, that although his holy zeale were approved by many: yet those many

H

could

1521.

*The Kings of
England by
the Pope sti-
led, Defen-
ders of the
Faith.
The death
of Leo the
Tenth.*

*Cardinall
Wolsey and
others sent
embassadors
to the Empe-
rour and
French King*

could haue wished him more temperate, and respec-
tiue of the Maiesty of Kings. This Booke was so
acceptable to the Pope, that according to the example
of ALEXANDER the Sixt, who entituled the King
of Spaine, *Catholique*: and of that Pope whosoever he
were, that gaue the French King the title of *Most
Christian*; he decreed to grace King HENRY and his
Successors with that honorable one of *Defender of the
Faith*. Which severall titles are by these Princes re-
tained to this day. But LEO long surviued not his
gift, about the end of the yeare dying (as is suspect-
ed) by poison. In the meane time the exulcerated
minde of the Emperour and the French King (ac-
cording to the nature of ambitious hatred, that for its
owne ends makes all causes iust) burst out into open
wars; for the composing whereof each of them had
formerly agreed to refer themselves (if any differen-
ces should arise) to the arbitrement of HENRY. He
therefore sends to each of them Embassadors, the
Cardinall of Yorke, the Earle of Worcester, and others,
who should, if it were possible, reconcile these inra-
ged Princes. All they could do, proued but an endea-
vor: for when they thought they had compassed their
desires, sudden newes came, That the Admirall BO-
NIVET had by force taken *Fuentaraby* a Towne of
the Emperours in *Biscay*. The Emperour would not
then ratify the Agreement, vnlesse this town were
redeliuered; which the French denying to do, all fell
to pieces againe, and the War was renewed. After
their deuoir in this cause, our Embassadors went di-
rectly to *Bruges* to the Emperour, of whom for a fort-
night, which was the time of their stay there, they had
royall entertainment. But he held the Cardinall in so
great esteeme, that it was apparant hee was not igno-
rant, how powerfull the Cardinall was with his
Prince. And here perhaps it would not be amisse
(in

(in regard of these times) to let the Reader know the pompe and state of this Cardinall, how many Gentlemen attended him apparrelled with velvet, and adorned with gold chaines, & then how many were cloathed in skarlet coats, the skirts whereof were guarded with veluet the full bredth of a hand. But let him guesse HERCVLES stature by the length of his foot. Such was the brauerie of his attendants, that in CHRISTIERNE King of *Denmarke*, and other Princes then residing at *Bruges*, it bred amazement. It was also reported, that he was by Gentlemen of the best ranke serued on the knee, a kinde of state which *Germany* had yet neuer knowne. He spent a huge masse of money in that Embassage, and that (as it is thought) not against his will. For he by all meanes sought the Emperors fauour, hoping that LEO, although much younger, either cut off by treachery, or his owne intemperance, might leaue the world before him: And then were it no hard matter for him, being vnderpropped by the Emperour and our King, to be aduanced to the Papacy. Wherefore at the first bruit of his death hee posted away PACEY the Deane of *Pauls* into *Italy*, with Mandates to certaine Cardinalls whom he thought respected him, that they should do their best in his behalfe. But before hee could reach *Rome*, he was certainly informed, that ADRIAN (sometimes Tutor to the Emperour, and then Viceroy of *Spaine*) was already elected, by the name of ADRIAN the Sixt.

1521.

Anno Dom. 1522. Reg. 12.

WOLSEY neuerthelesse was as full of ambitious hope as euer. For ADRIAN was a decrepit weake old man, and

1522.

1522.

therefore not likely (as indeed he did not) to survive him. In the mean time he might make an ascent, by which his ambition might clime. He therefore seeks to aduance the Emperours designes more than ever, & to that end he persuadeth HENRY to denounce war against the *French*; for that he denied to surrender *Fuentaraby*, & had broken the Couenants made between them, in not standing to the arbitrement of HENRY, as both CHARLES & FRANCIS had compromised; at what time it was likewise decreed, that HENRY should declare himself an enemy to the obstinate refuser. The *French* discerning the storme before it came, arrests all English ships, commits the Merchants to prison, and seizeth their goods to His own vse; stops all Pensions due either to HENRY for *Tournay*, or to his Sister the Dowager of *France*, for her Ioincture. The French ships and Merchants in *England* find the like entertainment, the Hostages giuen by the *French* for the foresaid sums, are committed to close prison, and the French Embassadour confined to his house. Levies are made throughout *England*, & great preparatiōs for another expedition into *France*. To which the King being wholly bent, Embassadors suddenly arrive from the Emperour; whose request was, That He would joine his forces with the Imperialls: and that, if it so pleased Him, CHARLES would within few dayes be in *England*, that so they might personally confer & aduise what course they were best to run. Many reasons mooued the Emperour by the way to touch at *England*. His Grandfather FERDINAND being dead, his presence was necessarily required in *Spaine*, whither he must passe by *England*. He feared lest this breach betwixt vs & *France*, might easily be made vp, he being so far distant. He had an *Ætna* in his brest, which burned with extreame hatred toward the *French*, and was confi-

1522.

confident, that his presence would raise our sparkle to a flame. They might personally treat & conclude more safely & securely than by Agents & Posts, of whom in matters of moment no wise man would make use, vnles forced by necessity. But the chiefe cause (as I coniecture) of this his second coming into *England*, was, that he was weary of WOLSEY, with whom he saw it was impossible long to continue friend. For the Cardinall by his importunity, one while for the Papacy, another while for the Archbishopricke of *Toledo*, did much molest him, who had determined to afford him nothing but good words. He disdained not in his letters to a *Butchers son*, to use that honorable compellation of *Couzen*, & whether present or absent, he afforded him all kind of honor whatsoeuer. But when the Cardinall craved any earnest of his loue, some excuse or other was found out to put him by, yet so, as still to entertaine him with hopes. But WOLSEY was subtile, and of a great spirit. And these deuises were now growne so stale, that they must needs be perceiued. CHARLES therefore neglecting his wonted course by WOLSEY, studies how to be assured of the King without him. For this no fitter means could be thought of, then this interview. The King was naturally courteous, loued the Emperour exceedingly, and reposed great confidence in him. CHARLES therefore hoped that by the familiarity of some few weekes hee might make the King his owne. But HENRY (he thought) would not long continue so, vnlesse he could some way lessen his fauor toward the Cardinall. This he hoped might be effected by admonishing the King, that he was now past the yeares of a childe, and needed no Tutor, that it was not fit he should suffer himselfe to be swaied by a Priest, one in all reason better skilled in the mysteries of the Altar, than of State,

1522.

The Empe-
ror, Charles
the second
time in En-
land.

State, against which in this respect (besides the abuse of his power) he must needs be some way (though perhaps vnwillingly) faulty. The addition of some aspersions withall were thought not to be amisse, which if not true, should at least carrie a shew of truth. That the Emperour practised something in this kinde, the consequences make it more than probable. HENRY being a noble Prince, and one that scorned money as much as any one breathing, was very glad of the Emperors comming; yet was his Treasury very bare, and so great a Guest could not be entertained without as great expences. CHARLES vpon notice of the Kings pleasure, attended by the Marquis of *Dorset*, the Bishop of *Coventry* and *Lichfield*, the Lord *De La-ware*, & others of the English Nobility, comes from *Graueling* to *Calais*, from whence he passed to *Douer*, where he was receiued by the Cardinall, who was accompanied with two Earles, ten Bishops, ten Abbots, thirty six Knights, 100 Gentlemen, thirty Priests (all these apparelled in velvet) and at least seuen hundred seruants. Two daies he staid at *Douer* before the King came. At length he came, and welcommed him with all Princely entertainment, professing, that no greater happinesse could betide him on earth, then the inioying his Maiesties most desired company, though but for so short a time. From *Douer*, taking *Canterbury* in the way, they came to *Greenwich*, where the Queene awaited the longed for presence of her Nephew. Fro thence to *London*, where they werereceiued by the Citifens with the solemnities vsuall at the Coronation of our Kings. At Whitson tide both Princes came to *Pauls*, where they heard the Cardinall say Masse. Sports agreeable to the entertainment of such a Guest, were not wanting. But when mention was made of renewing the League, *Windfore* was

was thought fittest for the Treaty, it being not above twenty miles from *London*, and a place altogether as it were composed for pleasure. *Windsore* is situated in a large Plaine vpon the bankes of the riuer *Thames*. The Castle (being the chiefest in *England*, for strength comparable to that of *Douer*, but far exceeding it in greatnesse and beauty) is built on a hill. This Castle containes besides the Kings Court, a goodly Church by *EDWARD* the Third dedicated to the blessed Virgin and Saint *George*; adioining to which is the Colledge, where are the houses of the Deane, Prebendaries, and Vicars Chorall, where also liue twelue Souldiers discharged of the wars (called Knights) and hauing pensions, who in their habits are bound daily to frequent the Church, there to pray vnto God for the Knights of the Illustrious Order of the Garter. Of this Order the Castle is the Seat, where according to the first Institution, the Knights are to be installed, on certaine dayes are to offer and to do some other duties. Here, vpon *Corpus Christi* day these Princes hauing on the robes of the Order, in their stalls heard Masse, and receiuing the Sacrament, bound themselves by oath inuiolably to obserue the Conditions of this new League, the chiefe Articles whereof were these:

That they should with joint and as great forces as they could, inuade France: That the Emperor should yearely pay to the King as much as was due to Him and his Sister, from the French, viz. 133000 crownes: That the Emperor should at conuenient yeares take to Wife his Cousin german the Lady MARY, the Kings onely Childe (who after raigned,
and

1522.

Windsore.

The Conditions of the League concluded with the Emperor.

1522.

and at age of fortie yeares was married to PHILIP the Emperors son) That he by whose default it should happen, that this match should not succeed, should pay the other five hundred thousand crownes: and for assurance of this, the Emperour should put Saint Omers and Aires into the Kings hands.

One would haue thought, it had passed the reach of human policy, to haue dissolued this band. But shortly after broken it was, and could neuer after be firmly knit againe. After eight dayes stay at *Windsore*, these Princes went to *Winchester*, and from thence to *Southampton*, where was the Emperors Fleet, consisting of a hundred and eighty ships. Here on the first of *Iuly* the Emperour tooke ship and made for *Spaine*.

In the meane time the Earle of *Surrey* hauing gathered a Fleet, landed neere *Morleys* in *Bretaigne*, forced the towne, and burned it. And hauing wasted all the Country therabout, he went into *Picardy*, to ioine with the Imperials. Some Forts they tooke and razed. They besieged *Hesdin*, but without successe: For Winter comming on, and our men dying apace of the Flux, they were faine to set saile homeward.

Rhodes taken by the Turke.

I will conclude this yeare with an ignominious and fatall losse to Christendome, the Isle of *Rhodes*, being on *Christmas* day taken by the Turkes, while Christian Princes disagreeing about matters of nothing, ruine themselues, and invite the Miscreant to propagate his long since too too formidable Empire. God grant they may at length, considering the common danger, rowse vp themselues, and with joint resistance repell this Enemy of CHRISTs Crosse, who although he be far enough from some, is too neere to the farthest.

Anno

Anno Dom. 1523. Reg. 15.

1523.

Christierne
King of Den-
marke.

CHRISTIERNE the Second, King of *Denmarke*, by the rebellion of his subiects driven out of his Kingdom, had resided some while with the Emperor, whose Sister he had married. The fifteenth of *June*, accompanied with his wife niepce to Queene KATHERINE, he landed at *Douer*. At *London* they abode some days, with that due honor that kinred and Princes giue to one another. The fift of *Iuly* they returned toward *Calais*. In the meane time a Parliament was held at *London*, wherein the States being certified of the necessity of war, and what a faire occasion was offered for the recouery of *France*, but that the war was like to be defectiue, in regard of the weakenes of it's sinews; a great sum of money was easily granted. The Kings of *France* exact money of their subiects at their pleasure; the Kings of *England* do not vsually, without a Parliament, wherein the pretence of war with *France* was wont to be a great motive of the subiects liberality. And indeed *France* was at this time greatly distracted, being oppressed with so many enemies abroad, and having to do with vndermining treachery at home; insomuch that our aduantages, if wisely followed, seemed to promise vs whatsoeuer we could hope for. FRANCIS was on the one side pressed with the war of *Milan*, on the other side by the Emperor: at home CHARLES Duke of *Bourbon* reuolted from him, by letters inciting our King to the recouery of his hereditary (as he acknowledged) Right in *France*, whereto, respectlesse of paine or perill, he promised his faithfull assistance. Neither was this offer to be slighted; for he had conceiued an implacable hatred against his Prince, and was able to make a great party in *France*. His valor and experience were after manifested by the greatnes of his exploits performed

I in

The Duke of
Bourbon re-
uolts.

1523.

in a short space, FRANCIS being taken prisoner by him, *Rome* sacked by his conduct, the Pope besieged in the Castle of *Saint Angelo*, and faine at last to ransom himselfe and his Cardinalls at a mightie rate. These notable aduanrages were all let slip through the neuer satisfied ambition and malice of one man; but so, that it made way for that great alteration which afterward hapned in the estate of the Church. Blessed be that Almighty Power, that conuerts the wicked designes of men to the good of his Church, and his owne glory.

The Parliament being dissolved, the Duke of *Suffolke* is sent into *France* with thirteene thousand men, viz. six hundred Launces, two hundred Archers on horsebacke, three thousand Archers on foot, five thousand Halberdiers, seuateene hundred drawne out of the Garrison of *Calais*, and two thousand six hundred Pioners. The English and Imperialls joining, invaded the French Dominions, tooke *Roye*, *Mondidier*, *Bohain*, *Bray*, *Chasteaubeau*, and marching within twenty two leagues of *Paris*, put the City in a terrible affright, vntill the Lord of *Brion* sent by the King with the comfortable newes of the coming of the Duke of *Vendosme* with foure hundred Launces, makes them take heart againe. After these exploits, our Forces toward the end of *December* were recalled.

*The death of
Adrian the
Sixth.
Clement the
Seuenth, suc-
ceedeth, and
Wolsey suf-
fereth the re-
pulse.*

In the meane time on the fourteenth of *September*, died Pope ADRIAN the Sixth: in whose place IULIUS MEDICES was after two moneths elected. Here WOLSEY againe failed in his hopes, who expected by the helpe of the Emperor and the King, to haue succeeded ADRIAN. But the Emperor neuer intended this dignity for him (for he did his best for IULIUS.) Neither indeed had hee beene willing, could hee haue aduanced him to the Chaire.

For

For the Cardinalls were in so short a time weary of ADRIAN, who was a stranger, and little acquainted with the Court of Rome. And the Colledge repined to see any other sit in Saint Peters Chaire, then an Italian, or at least one bred vp in Italy. Neuerthelesse WOLSEY was so incensed against the Emperour, by whose default (he was verily perswaded) it happened that he missed of the Papacy, that now bidding hope farewell, he was possessed with a desire to be reuenged on the Emperour for this conceiued iniury. Hee therefore on a sudden turnes French, and to hinder the Emperours proceedings, procured our Forces to be called home, pretending the ill season of the yeare, with promise that the next Spring they should be returned againe.

1523.

Anno Dom. 1524. Reg. 16.

BVt CHARLES hauing not giuen any iust cause of breach, WOLSEY dared not publicuely to professe his affection toward the French, with whom notwithstanding by the intercourse of one IOHN IOACHIM a Genouese he maintaines intelligence, and without the priuity of HENRY laies the platforme of a new League. The war was very hot betweene the Emperour and the French. FRANCIS had already taken Milan, and with a mighty army sate downe before Pavia, vowing not to rise from thence vntill he had taken it. The Duke of Bourbon and the Imperialls were in number little inferior, & stood in want of nothing but money (indeed all in all) wherwith the Pope, the Venetians, & our HENRY were to furnish him. CLEMENT, although he had obtained the Papacy chiefly by CHARLES his meanes, detained the money which his predecessor ADRIAN had promised; saying, It becomed not his

1524.

1524.

Wolsey per-
suades the
King to a
divorce.

Holineſſe, to intermeddle with the wars of Princes. The Venetians at firſt answered coldly, at length plainly denied: for they ſtood in awe of the *French*, and were jealous of the Emperours ambition. And the malicious Cardinall had ſo played his part with HENRY, that the Imperials diſappointed of the monethly ſummes due from him, were exceedingly diſtreſſed. Now WOLSEY to make a ſeparation betweene theſe two Princes, told the King, that he certainly found that the Emperour did but delude him: that hee had indeed promiſed to marry the Kings Daughter; but a rumour was raiſed by the Spaniards, That this match would be little either for his profit or his honor, forasmuch as vpon the point, the Lady MARY was but a Baſtard, begotten, it is true, in wedlocke, yet inceſtuouſly, the match being by the Eccleſiaſticall Conſtitutions made vnlawfull: for he could not lawfully marry Queene CATHARINE, who had beene before married to his brother Prince ARTHUR: That both the old and new Testaments were expreſſe againſt ſuch coniunctions, and that therefore it lay not in the Pope to diſpence with them. It is certaine that the Emperours Embaſſadors had thus diſcourſed with WOLSEY vpon this very point, and WOLSEY made his uſe of it accordingly. Hee knew the King doated not on his Queene, and buzzed theſe things in his eares, in hope he would be- thinke himſelfe of a new wife. This taking as he deſired, and the King lamenting, that for lacke of Iſſue he ſhould leaue the Kingdome to a Childe, to a Woman, to One, whom, in regard the lawfullneſſe of her birth was questionable, hee could not with ſafety make his Heire; the Cardinall propoſed vnto him for wife MARGARET Duchefſe of *Alaſcon* a beautifull Lady, and Siſter to the King of *France*.
He

He knew, that vpon his Diuorce from CATHARINE, and Marriage with the other, HENRY must of necessity fall foule with the Emperour, and without hope of reconciliation, strongly adhere to the French. That this diuorce was for these reasons set on foot by WOLSEY, the Imperiall Historians do all accord; neither for ought I euer read, do Ours deny. But howsoever it came to passe, this is certaine, That HENRY in stead of furnishing the Emperour with the money he had promised, demanded all that he had already lent.

1524.

Anno Dom. 1525. Reg. 17.

1525.

RICHARD PACEY Deane of S. Pauls, had been not long before sent to *Venice* as an Agent concerning our affaires in *Italy*. He was a very learned man, and worthy (had God been so pleased) of a better Destiny. He knew not the change of the Kings minde. But perceiuing the monethly pay due from the King, according to promise came not, of whose Honor, which now lay at stake, he was very tender, he was much discontented. To salue all, he assaied to take vp so much money of certaine Merchants, with whom it seemes he in part preuailed. But the sum was so small, that it stood the Imperialls in as small steed, & yet so great, that it exceeded the ability of his priuate estate to make satisfaction. Vpon notice of the Kings alienation from the Emperor, he fell irrecoverably distracted.

Richard Pacey Deane of Pauls falleth mad.

In the meane time the Duke of *Bourbon* and the Imperialls were in so great distresse and want of all things, that vnlesse they could by some stratagem or other draw the French to commit all to the fortune of a battaile, the Army must needs disband.

The battel of Pavy.

1525.

disband. They disquiet and trie the *French* (especially in the night preceding Saint *Matbias* day, which was the day of the Emperor CHARLES his natiuity) with many false alarmes. They make two squadrons of horse, and foure of foot. The first consisting of six thousand *Lansquenets*, Spaniards, and Italians, vnder the command of the Marquis of *Guaſto*. The second of Spanish foot vnder the Marquis of *Pescara*. The third & fourth of *Lansquenets*, vnder the Vice-roy LAVNOY and the Duke of *Bourbon*. They came to a wall called the *Park-wall*, & vnder the covert of the night cast downe aboute sixty paces, enter within it, the first squadron taking the way to *Mirabell*, the rest marching toward the Kings Army. The King thought the Imperials went to *Mirabell*, as making choice of the plaine open fields to fight in. He was vnwilling to leave the besieged at liberty, & yet the *Plaines* were aduantageous for his Horse. He therefore commands his Artillery to be discharged, which somewhat endamaged them; and though vnwilling, drawes his Forces out of their trenches (then which the Imperials desired nothing more) & opposed the whole strength of his Army against the. But passing before the Cannon, hinders their execution. They that took the way to *Mirabell*, now turne head, and both Armies engage themselves in a cruell fight, wherein the King more following Shadowes then Substances, and the idle rumors of the vulgar, then the meanes of a most certaine and glorious victory, is ouerthrowne and taken prisoner, loosing beside the floure of the French Nobilitie (almost all either taken or slaine) at one blow the Duchie of *Milan*, the possession whereof had made him Lord of the greatest part of *Lombardy*. Pope CLEMENT, who had left the Emperour for the French (which hee afterward repented) often aduertised

1525.

aduertised the King, that the Imperials were in great distresse and want, that they continually mutinied for lacke of pay : that he had taken so sufficient order with the King of *England* and the rest of the Confederates, that they should continue bare enough of money. If therefore he would but hold his hand, and forbear to fight, necessity enforcing the Imperials to disband, he should be victorious without bloudshed. But he was not capable of so good advice. His Forces were great (yet short of his account, his Captaines treacherously abusing him, in not furnishing those numbers of foot for which they receiued pay) and it were equally a dishonour to him, either to seeme to avoid the Enemy, or to ly still so long at a siege, to no purpose. The Diuine Power hauing decreed to chastise him, permitted him through impatience to run headlong into these errours, which so deeply plunged him in those calamities, that without Gods especiall favour had proved fatall to him and his *France*.

When I consider this and many other the like chances happening as well in the course of a private mans life, as in publique affaires, I cannot but wonder at the sottish valour of this age, wherein rather than endure the touch of the least (though false) aspersi-
 on, wee will run the hazard both of life and fortunes. How many braue men do wee daily see, wonderfull ingenious in this kinde of folly? who standing vpon I know not what *Points of Honor*, vpon the least offence challenge the field, and wilfully seeke out their owne destruction. What in Gods name is become of the patience of that lingering *FABIUS*, who quietly bearing the bitter taunts and mockes of his Souldiers, of the People, and the Senate, yet brought home an easy, though late victory? We are certainly too blame,
 with

1525.

with the Dog we catch at the shadow and loose the substance. Of our Saviour we shall learne, that it is the highest point of fortitude, *In patience to possesse our soules*. And according to ARISTOTLE, True valour is regardles of ill language.

*Mor de ar opprobrijs falsis, m̄temq̄ colores?
Fassus honor iuvat, & mendax infamia terret
Quem, nisi mendosum & mendacem?*

It is HORACE:

*Backe-bitten, must I needs turne pale for it?
False honors please, and lying slanders fright,
Whom, but the vnworthy and vainglorious wight?*

In the tent of the captiue King, the letters of the Pope and our King, concerning their late league with the French, being found, the Duke of Bourbon now knew the cause why supplies of money came in so slowly. And PRAT Lieger here for the Emperor, vpon notice of it, without leaue withdrew himselfe from Court, and on the ninth of Aprill secretly departed the land. In the meane time HENRY little suspecting that these secret compacts were knowne to the Emperor, about the end of March sent Embassadors to him CVTBERT TONSTAL Bishop of London, & Sir RICHARD WINGFIELD Knight of the Garter; by whom Hee did congratulate his late victorious successe, admonishing him to a close pursuit of his fortunes: That if his Imperiall Maiesty intended with greater forces to oppresse the already Vanquished; in regard of the strict ty of friendship betweene them, his necessary endeavors should in no sort be wanting. What answer the Emperor gaue I know not. It is very likely he paid the King in his owne coine, and dissembled with the Dissembler; but hauing courteously entertained our Embassadors, as courteously dismissed them.

But

But the King wants money, and must now dissemble with his subjects. He pretended war with *France*, and with this key hopes to open his Subjects coffers. The expectation of supplies by a Parliament would prove tedious; some shorter course must be taken. Money is therefore demanded by Proclamation, & that no lesse then according to the sixth part of every mans Moveables. Divers great personages appointed Commissioners, vse all faire meanes to draw the people to contribute. But although they sate in Commission in divers parts of the Kingdome at one and the same time, they were so far from preuailing, that as if the people had vniuersally conspired, it was every where denied, and the Commissioners very ill entreated, not without further danger of sedition and tumult. Hereupon the King calls a Parliament to be held at *London*: wherein he professeth himselfe to be vtterly ignorant of these intollerable courses by such burthenous taxations. The King disclaiming it, euery one seekes to free himselfe. The Cardinall was at last faine to take all vpon himselfe; protesting, *That as a faithfull Seruant, he had no further end in it, than the profit of his Lord the King; and that hee had aduised not onely with his Maiesties Councell (which they all acknowledged) but also with the Learned in the Lawes both Diuine and Humane, whose opinion it was, that the King might lawfully take the same course that PHARAOH did, who by the ministry of IOSEPH sequestred a certaine portion of euery mans priuate estate for the publique good.* But the dislike of the people occasioned by this (though fruitlesse) proiect, was greater than could be removed by this excuse.

And yet this proiect was not altogether fruitlesse, the Kings apparant want affording a sufficient pretext of deferring the war with *France* vntill another yeare. Neither was it the Kings intent to make vse of his ad-

K

vantages

1525.

*Money de-
manded and
commanded
by Procla-
mation.*

1525.

*The King
falls in Love
with Anne
Boleyn.*

*A creation
of Lords.*

vantages ouer the French, who now lay open to all his blows. HENRY hauing put away his wife, the Emperour must needs be netled, and then the amity of France would stand him in some steed. Indeed CATHARINE was a noble and a vertuous Lady, but shee had liued so long, as to make her Husband weary of her. He affected the daughter of Sir THOMAS BOLEYN Treasurer of his Household. Her he intends to marry, and to be diuorced from the other: For he did in his soule abhor this incestuous Match, and it stood not with the publique weale, that He should liue single, especially the lawfulnessse of his Daughters birth being so questionable. Hee married not againe for his pleasure, but to settle the Kingdome on his lawfull Issue. The Learned (as many as Hee had conferred with) did generally pronounce the first marriage void: yet would Hee haue it lawfully decided, that with a safe conscience He might make choice of a second. Thus far had WOLSEY willingly led him, hoping to haue drawne him to a Match in France. But Hee was of age to choose for himselfe, and had already els where settled his affections.

And the more to manifest his love, on the eighteenth of Iune he created his future Father in law Sir THOMAS BOLEYN, Viscont Rochfort. At the same time were created HENRY FITZ-ROY the Kings naturall sonne by ELIZABETH BLOUNT Daughter to Sir IOHN BLOUNT Knight, Earle of Nottingham, and Duke of Richmond and Somerset: HENRY COURTNEY Earle of Devonshire the Kings Couzen german, Marquis of Excester: HENRY BRANDON eldest sonne to the Duke of Suffolke by the Kings Sister the Dowager of France, Earle of Lincolne: THOMAS MANNERS Lord Roos, Earle of Rutland: Sir HENRY CLIFFORD, Earle of Cumberland: and ROBERT RATCLIF Lord Fitzwater, Viscont Fitzwater.

Cardinall WOLSEY this yeare laid the foundation of

of two Colledges, one at *Ipswich* the place of his birth, another at *Oxford*, dedicated to our Sauour CHRIST, by the name of *Christ-Church*. This later, though not halfe finished, yet a magnificent and royall Worke, a most fruitfull Mother of Learned Children, doth furnish the Church and Commonwealth with multitudes of able men, and amongst others, acknowledgeth me (such as I am) for her Foster-childe. The other, as if the Founder had also been the foundation, fell with the Cardinall, and being for the most part pulled downe, is long since converted to private vses. The Cardinalls private estate (although it were wonderfull great) being not sufficient to endow these Colledges with revenues answerable to their foundation, the Pope consenting, he demolished fourty Monasteries of meaner note, and conferred the lands belonging to them, on these his new Colledges. It hath been the observation of some, That this businesse, like that proverbiall gold of *Tbolouse*, was fatall to those that any way had a hand in it. We will hereafter shew what became of the Pope and the Cardinall. But of five, whom he made vse of in the alienation of the guifts of so many religious men, it afterward happened, that two of them challenging the field of each other, one was slaine, and the other hanged for it: a third throwing himselfe headlong into a Well, perished wilfully: a fourth, before that a wealthy man, sunke to that low ebbe, that he after begged his bread: and Doctor ALLEN the fift, a man of especiall note, being Archbishop of *Dublin*, was murdered in *Ireland*. I could wish, that by these and the like examples, men would learne to take heed how they lay hands on things consecrated to God. If the Divine Iustice so severely punished those that converted the abused (yet not regarding the abuse, but

1525.
Wolsey to
build two
Colledges.

Demolisheth
four Monasteries.

Sacrilege
punished.

1525.

following the sway of their ambitious desires) goods of the Church to vndoubtedly better vses; what can we expect of those that take all occasions to rob and spoile the Church, hauing no other end, but onely the enriching of themselues.

LV THER had notice of HENRY his intended Divorce, and that from CHRISTIERNE the expelled King of *Denmarke*, who eagerly solicited him to write friendly vnto the King; putting LV THER in hope, that HENRY being a courteous Prince, might by milde persuations be induced to embrace the reformation which LV THER had begun. And indeed LV THER foreseeing the necessary consequences of this Divorce, was easily entreated, and did write vnto the King in this submissiue manner:

Luther writes
to the King.

He doubted not but he had much offended his Majesty by his late reply: but he did it rather enforced by others, then of his owne accord. Hee did now write, presuming vpon the Kings much bruted humanity; especially being informed, That the King himselfe was not Author of the Booke against him, which thing he understood was captiously cavilled at by some Sophisters. And hauing occasion to speake of the Cardinall of Yorke, he called him the Caterpillar of England: He understood, the King did now loath that wicked sort of men, and in his minde to fauour the Truth. Wherefore he craueth pardon of his Majesty, beseeching him to remember, that wee being mortall, should not make our enmities

1525.

ties immortall. If the King would be pleased to impose it, hee would openly acknowledge his fault, and blazon his Royall Vertues in another Booke. Then hee wished him to stop his eares against those slanderous tongues that branded him with Heresy: for this was the summe of his Doctrine, That wee must bee saued through Faith in Christ, who did beare the punishment of our sinnes in every part, and throughout his whole body, who dying for vs, and rising againe, raigneth with the Father for euer. That he taught this to be the Doctrine of the Prophets and Apostles: and that out of this position hee shewed, what Charity was, how we ought to behaue our selues one towards another, that we are to obey Magistrates, & to spend our whole life in the profession of the Gospell. If this Doctrine containe any Impiety or Errour, why do not his Aduersaries demonstrate it? Why do they condemne him without either lawfull hearing, or confutation? In that he inveigheth against the Pope and his Adherents, hee doth it not without good reason, forasmuch as for their profits sake, they teach things contrary to what Christ and the Apostles did, that so they may domineere ouer the Flocke, & maintaine themselves in Gluttony & Idlenes. That this was the marke at which their thoughts

and

1525.

and deeds aimed: and that it was so notorious, that they themselves could not deny it. That if they would reform themselves by changing their idle and filthy course of life maintained by the losse and wrong of others, the differences might easily be composed. That his Tenets were approued by many Princes and Estates of Germany, who did reverently acknowledge this great blessing of God, amongst whom he wonderfully desired he might ranke his Maiesty. That the Emperour and some others opposed his proceedings, he did not at all wonder: for the Prophet DAVID had many ages since foretold, That Kings and Nations should conspire against the Lord and against his Christ, and cast away his yoke from them. That when he did consider this and the like places of Scripture, he did rather wonder that any Prince did fauor the doctrine of the Gospell. And to conclude, he craued a favorable answer.

The Kings
answer.

The King made a sharpe reply to LUTHERS letter, accusing him of base inconstancy. He stands in defence of his Booke, which (hee said) was in great esteeme with many Religious and Learned men. That he reuiled the Cardinall (a Reuerend Father) was to be regarded as from him from whose impiety neither God nor man could be free. That

1525.

That both Himselfe and the whole Realme had found the profitable and wholsome effects of the Cardinalls endeavours, who should reape this fruit of LUTHERS railing, that whereas he loved him very well before, hee would now favour him more than ever: That among other of the Cardinalls good deeds, this was one, that he tooke especiall care, that none of LUTHERS leprosy, contagion, and heresy, should cleave to, or take roote in this Kingdome: Then he upbraided him with his incestuous marriage with a Nunne, a crime as hainous and abhominable as any.

At this answer (which the King caused to be printed) LUTHER grieved much, blaming his friends that had occasioned it; saying, That he writ in that humble manner only to please his Friends, and that he now plainly saw how much he was mistaken. That he committed the like errour in writing friendly at the request of others, to Cardinall CAIETAN, GEORGE Duke of Saxony, and ERASMVS, the fruits whereof were, that he made them the more violent. That he shewed himselfe a foole, in hoping to find Pietie and Zeale in Princes Courts, in seeking Christ in the Kingdome of Satan, in searching for IOHN BAPTIST among the Cloathed in Purple. But being he could not prevaile by faire meanes, he would take another course.

The late mention of ERASMVS puts me in minde of a Booke written by him either this or the yeare passed, at the entreaty of the King and the Cardinall (as he himselfe in an Epistle confesseth) entituled, *De Libero Arbitrio*. Whereto LUTHER made a quicke reply, writing a booke *De Servo Arbitrio*.

Anno

1526.

*A breach
with the
Emperor.*

Anno Dom. 1526. Reg. 18.

MAny reasons might move the Emperour to seeke the continuation of a Peace with *England*. The French (although they concealed it, their King beeing not yet at liberty) intend to revenge their late ouerthrow: The Turke prepares for *Hungary*, the King whereof (*LEWIS*) had married *ANNE* the Emperors Sister: Almost all *Italy* by the Popes meanes combined against *CHARLES*, whose power is now becom formidable: And *Germany* it self, the Boors having lately bin vp in arms, being scarce pacified, do yet every where threaten new tumults. In this case the enmity of *HENRY* must necessarily much impeach his proceedings. But many things againe vrge him on the other side: his Aunts disgrace: (for of this he long since had an inkling) The late League concluded vnder hand with the French: But that which swaied aboue all, was, the dislike of his promised match with the Kings Daughter. That the Queene his Aunt might be reconciled to her Husband, there might yet be some hope. The League with *France* (especially the French Kings case being now so desperate) might be as easily broken, as it was made: But this Match did no way sort to his minde, which he had either for loue, or for some other private respects, settled els where. *ISABELLA* Sister to *LOHN* King of *Portugall*, was a brave beautifull Lady, and had a Dowry of nine hundred thousand Duc-kets. *MARY* was neither marriageable, nor beautifull; yet her by agreement must he marry without any other Dowry then those foure hundred thousand crownes which he had borrowed of *HENRY*. The wars had drawne his Treasury dry, and his Subiects in

in *Spaine* being required to relieve their Prince, doe plainly (perhaps not without subornation of some principall persons) deny it, vnlesse hee marry *ISABELLA*, one in a manner of the same Linage, of the same Language and Nation, and of yeares sufficient to make a mother. By way of seruice (Custome growing to a Law) they are to giue their King at his marriage foure hundred thousand Duckets: if hee will in this be pleased to satisfie their request, they promise to double the vsuall summe. For these reasons, when *HENRY* sent Embassadours to treat againe (whether sincerely or no, I cannot say) concerning the renewing of the League, the marriage of the Ladie *MARY*, and of warre in *France* to bee maintained at the common charge of both; *CHARLES* answered but coldly, and at last even in the very nuptiall solemnities sends to excuse his marriage to the King, whereunto the vndeniable desires of his subiects had in a manner forced him. Some doe farther adde, that concerning that part of the Embassage, of warre against *France*, our demands were such, as if they had beene purposely coined by *WOLSEY* to force the Emperour to the prioritie of an apparent breach. For the King demanded no smaller share in the conquest, then *Picardie*, *Normandie*, *Guien*, *Gascoigne*, with the title of, King of *France*: and that the Emperour partaking both of Perill and Charge should himselfe serve in Person. But *CHARLES* wanting money, and tired with continuall perill, if he regard either his safetie and ease, or his profit, must not give his assent, especially considering, that the Captive King made larger offers, and those with Peace, then these, yea although he became victorious, with Warre, the event whereof being alwayes doubtfull, no man can assure himselfe of wished successe. Neither indeed did *HENRY* expect any other issue of his Embassie, then

1526.

*The King
endeavoursto
relieve the
French
King.*

a flat refusall. For at the same time he deales with the Regent (the Captive Kings Mother) to send over some trustie person, with whom he might consult of the maine chance; which she gladly did, dispatching away the Lord of *Brion* President of *Rouen*, and *JOHN IOACHIM* with a large Commission, and Instructions by all submissive and faire Language to perswade the King to persist in the prosecution of this new League. For indeed shee much feared, least the consideration of his advantages over the tottering Estate of *France* might make him flie off againe. *France* was already distressed: what would it bee, if the Emperour pressing hard on the one side, and the Duke of *Bourbon* a homebred enemy revolting, besides many other occasions, the *English* should infest it on the other side? In *England* these Agents found their entertainment such, that they could not but hope well, especially making meanes to the Cardinall, who yet swayed the King. *WOLSEY* long since disaffected the Emperour, but now made his hate apparant. *CHARLES* before the battaile of *Pauy* sent no letters to the Cardinall, but intirely written by himselfe, and subscribed,

Your Sonne and Couzen,

CHARLES.

After this victorie he sent one or two, subscribed barely with his Name, without the vsuall solemne forme, or any signification of favour or respect. These were evident tokens of an alienated minde, and *WOLSEY* durst view hates with him. Neither did he deale otherwise with *HENRIE*, then as one beneath him, being now puffed vp with the conceipt of that great victory, for the obtaining whereof *HEN-*

RIE

RIE did beare a part in the charge, though indeed not so great as he promised. The Kings affaires now stood vpon those termes, that renouncing the strict alliance with the Emperour, hitherto by so many ties kept inviolable, he must make a party with the French.

1526.

Brion therefore at the Counsaile Table having Audience, deplores his Princes calamitie, and the miseries inflicted vpon his Countrey by their late overthrow. He calleth to minde what Trophies the English erected in France, when the Estate of it was most flourishing, with all acknowledging, that France being now as it were in the Sun-set of its Fortune, occasion was offred of advancing the English Colours farther then ever. But it would neither besee me so magnanimous a King, nor would it be for the good of England, at this time to invade it. A generous minde scorneth to insult over one already dejected. Neither would the victorie, beside the fortune of warre, want its dangers, being to be communicated with one, already become so potent, that no lesse, then the vnited Forces of all Europe would serve to stop the current of his fortune, which must necessarily be done, vnlesse we could be content willingly to vndergoe the miseries of a Spanish servitude. Hee therefore craved of his Maiestie, that leaving the Emperour (who puffed vp with his late successe contemned his best Friends) Hee

L 2

would

1526.

would vouchsafe to make a League with the King his Master, whom in this so great a time of need if He would bee pleased to raise as it were from the ground, He should by so great a benefit oblige him to a faithfull Friendship, which hee should vpon all occasions be readie to manifest, vnlesse for foule Ingratitude hee had rather vndergo the censure of the Christian World.

Having delivered thus much in Latine, Sir THOMAS MORE (afterward Lord Chancellor) returned this answer in Latine likewise:

That the King was well pleased, that the French acknowledged Hee wanted not power to revenge old iniuries: that having felt his Force, they should also tast of his Bounty: that Hee would do the utmost of his indenuour to set their Captive King at libertie. Which if Hee effected, Hee hoped when Hee had occasion to make vse of their King, hee would not be vnmindfull of so good a turne freely done in so vrgent a season. In the meane time Hee was content to make a perpetuall Peace with them. As for the Emperour, He would consider what to determine of him.

*A League
concluded
with the
French
King.*

So a most firme League is concluded with the French (the Regent vndertaking for her Sonne) and a separation from the Emperour so openly made, that the first thing concluded betweene them was,

1526.

was, That it should not bee lawfull for the French King in lieu of his ransom to consigne any part of his Kingdome to the Empercur. The French were glad of this League, who now began to conceiue some hope of good, being secure of England. Indeed it made so great an impression in the heart of FRANCIS, that in his care of our affaires for many yeares together hee shewed himselfe mindfull of so great a benefit. These things were done in the winter season.

A little after FRANCIS having beene a yeare Prisoner in Spaine was vpon these Conditions at length set at liberty.

The French King set at liberty.

That as sone as he came into France, hee should consigne the Dutchie of Burgoigne to the Emperour: That hee should quit the Souerainetie of Flanders and Arthois: That hee should renounce all his right pretended to the Dutchy of Milan and Kingdome of Naples: That he should restore to his honours the Duke of Bourbon, and the rest that had revolted with him: That he should marrie Eleonor the Emperour's Sister Queene of Portugall: That he should pay the whole summes of money heretofore due to the King of England, his Sister the Queene of France, and Cardinall Wolsey, The payment whereof the Emperour had vndertaken, that wee might not be endammaged by partaking with him.

For the performance of these and other things of lesse moment, FRANCIS not onely bound himselfe

1526.

felfe by Oath, but also delivered his two Sonnes FRANCIS the Dolphin and HENRY Duke of Orleans, who should remaine Hostages in *Spaine* vntill all things were duly performed. FRANCIS as soone as hee entred into his Realme ratified all the Articles of the Treaty, but that concerning the Duchie of *Burgoigne*, which hee pretended he could not alienate without the consent of his subiects, Having therefore assembled the Estates of the Countrey for the debating of this matter, vpon a sudaine in the presence of the Emperours Embassadours is publicly proclaimed the League made betweene the Kings of *England* and of *France*, the Pope, the *Venetians*, *Florentines*, and *Suisses*, (called the *Holy League*) for the common libertie of *Italy*. The Embassadours much amazed, and seeing small hopes of the Dutchy of *Burgoigne* (for which they came) returne into *Spaine*, and aduertise the Emperour, that if he will bee content with a pecuniarie ransom, and free the two Princes, the King was willing to pay it; other Conditions he was like to have none.

The King of
Hungary
slaine by the
Turkes.

In the meane time SOLYMAN not forgetting to make his profit of these horrible confusions, invaded *Hungary* with a great Army, overthrew the *Hungarians*, slew King LEWIS the Emperours Brother in law, and conquered the greatest part of the Kingdome. For the obtaining of this victorie our Rashnesse was more availeable to him, then his owne Forces. The *Hungarians* in comparison of their Enemies were but a handfull: but having formerly beene many times victorious over the *Turkes*, they perswaded the young King that hee should not obscure the ancient glory of so warlike a Nation: that not expecting the aides of *Transylvania*, he should encounter the Enemy even in the open fields, where the *Turkes* in regard of their multitudes of horse might be thought invin-

1526.

invincible. The event shewed the goodnesse of this counsell. The Army consisting of the chiefe strength and Nobilitie of the Countrey was overthrowne, a great slaughter made, and the King himselfe slaine with much of the Nobility and chiefe Prelates of the Realme, and among them TOMORAY'S Archbishop of Colocza, the chiefe authour of this ill advised attempt.

I cannot omit an odde iest at the same time occasioned by WOLSEY his ambition. It was (but falsly) rumoured that Pope CLEMENT was dead. The Cardinall had long beene *sicke of the Pope*, and the King lately of *his Wife*. WOLSEY perswades the King, there was no speedier way to compass his desires, then if Hee could procure him to be chosen Pope, CLEMENT being now dead. STEPHEN GARDINER a stirring man, one very learned and that had a working spirit, did then at Rome solicit the Kings Divorce from Queene CATHARINE. Wherein although vsing all possible meanes, and that CLEMENT was no friend to the Emperour, yet could hee not procure the Popes favour in the King's behalfe. Nay, whether he would not cut off all meanes of reconciliation with the Emperour, if need were, or whether being naturally slow, hee did not vsually dispatch any matter of great moment speedily; or peradventure (whereto the event was agreeable) that he perceived it would be for his profit to spin it out at length; or (which some alledge) that he was of opinion, that this marriage was lawfully contracted, so that he could not giue sentence on either side without either offence to his Conscience, or his Friend; the Pope could not be drawne to determine either way in this businesse. These delayes much vexed the King. If matters proceed so slowly vnder CLEMENT, on whom hee much presumed, what could hee expect from

Wolsey
seeks to bee
Pope, Sede
nondum va-
cante.

1526
Rome

1527.

from another Pope, one perhaps wholly at the Emperours devotion? Hee therefore resolved to endeavour the advancement of *WOLSEY* to the Chaire; from whom hee promised to himselfe a successe answerable to his desires. *HENRY* therefore sends away speedy Posts to *GARDINER* with ample instructions in the behalfe of *WOLSEY*, willing him to worke the Cardinals, some with promises, others with guifts, some with threats, others with persuasions, and to omit no means that might be any way availeable. But this was to build Castles in the aire. The messenger had scarce set forth, when report that had made *CLEMENT* dead, had againe revived him.

Anno Dom. 1527. Reg. 19.

1527.
Rome sacked.

THe sixt of *May*, *Rome* was taken and sacked by the Imperials vnder the conduct of the Duke of *Bourbon*, who was himselfe slaine in the assault marching in the head of his troupes. The Pope, Cardinals, Embassadours of Princes, and other Nobles hardly escaping into the Castle of *Saint Angelo*, were there for some dayes besieged. At length, despairing of succours, and victuals failing, the Pope for feare hee should fall into the hands of the *Lansquenets* for the most part seasoned with *LUTHERS* doctrine, and therefore passionate enemies to the *Sea of Rome*, agreeth with the Prince of *Auranges* (after the death of the Duke of *Bourbon* chosen Generall by the Army) yeilding himselfe and the Cardinals to him, who kept them close Prisoners in the Castle. *Rome* was now subiect to all kind of crueltie, and insolencies vsuall to a conquered Citie intended for destruction. Beside Slaughter, Spoile, Rapes, Ruine, the

1527.

the Pope and Cardinals were the sport and mockerie of the licentious multitude. HENRY pretended much griefe at this newes; but was inwardly glad that such an occasion was offred, whereby he might oblige CLEMENT in all likelihood (as he had iust cause) offended with the Emperour for this so insolent and harsh proceeding. Whereupon hee dispatched WOLSEY into *France*, who should intimate to the King, his perpetuall Ally, what a scandale it was to all Christendome that the Head of it should bee oppressed with Captivitie, a thing which did more especially concerne FRANCIS his affaires. The Cardinall set forth from *London* about the beginning of *Iuly* accompanied with nine hundred Horse, among which were many Nobles, The Archbishop of *Dublin*, the Bishop of *London*, the Earle of *Derby*, the Lords SANDS, MONTEGLE, and HARENDON, besides many Knights and Gentlemen. WOLSEY found the *French King* at *Amiens*, where it is agreed, that at the common charge of both Princes, warre shall be maintained in *Italy* to set the Pope at libertie, and to restore him to the possessions of the Church, HENRY contributing for his part thirtiethousand pounds sterling a moneth. Vpon the returne of the Cardinall, FRANCIS sent into *England* MONTMORENCY Lord Steward and Mareschall of *France* for the confirmation of this League, and to invest the King with the Order of Saint MICHAEL. Hee arriued in *England* about the middle of *October* accompanied with JOHN BELLAY Bishop of *Bayeux* (afterward Cardinall) the Lord of *Brion*, and among others MARTIN BELLAY the Writer of the *French Historie*, who in this manner describes the passages of this Embassage: MONTMORENCY arriving at *Dover* was honourably received by many Bishops and Gentlemen sent by the King,

M

who

Montmorency
Embassador
from France.

1527.

who brought him to London, where he was met by twelve hundred horse, who conducted him to his lodging in the Bishop of Londons Palace. Two dayes after, hee went by water to Greenwich fower miles beneath London, where the King oft resideth. There hee was very sumptuously entertained by the King and the Cardinall of Yorke. Having had Audience, the Cardinall having often accompanied him at London and Greenwich, brought him to a house which he had built a little before, ten miles above London, seated vpon the bankes of Thames, called Hampton Court. (The Cardinall gave it afterward to the King, & it is this day one of the King's chiefeft houses) The Embassador with all his Attendants was there feasted by him foure or five dayes together. The Chambers had hangings of wonderfull value, and euery place did glitter with innumerable vessels of gold and silver. There were two hundred and fourescore Beds, the furniture to most of them being silke, and all for the entertainment of Strangers onely. Returning to London, we were on Saint MARTINS day invited by the King to Greenwich to a Banquet the most sumptuous that ever I beheld, whether you consider the dishes, or the Maskes and Playes, wherein the Ladie MARY the Kings Daughter acted a part. To conclude, the King and MONTMORENCY having taken the Sacrament together, the King for himselfe, MONTMORENCY in the behalfe of FRANCIS swore the obseruation of the League. The King bestowed great gifts on euery one, and dismissed MONTMORENCY, who left the Bishop of Bayeux Leiger for his King, to endeavour the continuance of the amitie begun betweene these Princes.

Shortly after were sent into France Sir THOMAS BOLEN Viscount Rochfort, and Sir ANTHONY BROWNE Knight, who together with IOHN CLERRE Bishop of Bath and Wells Leiger in France, should take the French King's Oath, not to violate the late League in any part, and to present him with the Order of the Garter.

We

We had now made *France* ours. Nothing remained but to let the Emperour know the effects of the late Confederacy. To this end Sir FRANCIS POINTZ and *Clarentieux* King at Armes are dispatched away to the Emperour, to demand the moitie of the bootie gotten in the battaile of *Pavie*, and the Duke of *Orleans* (one of the *French* Kings Sonnes left Hostage for his Father) to be delivered to HENRY, who had borne a share in the charges of that war, and therefore expected to partake in the gaines: To command him to draw his Army out of *Italy*, and not to disturbe the peace of Christendome by molesting CHRIST'S Vicar. This if he refused to do (neither was there expectation of any thing else) they should forthwith defie him. They execute their Commission, and perceiving nothing to be obtained, *Clarentieux* and a certaine *French* Herald being admitted to the Emperours presence, do in the names of both Kings proclaime war against him. CHARLES accepts it chearefully. But the Embassadors of *France*, *Venice*, and *Florence* craving leave to depart, are committed to safe custodie, vntill it be knowne what is become of his Embassadors with these Estate. The report hercof flies into *England*, and withall, that Sir FRANCIS POINTZ and *Clarentieux* were committed with the rest. Whereupon the Emperour's Embassador is detained vntill the truth be knowne, as it shortly was by the safe returne of them both. But Sir FRANCIS POINTZ about the beginning of the next Summer died suddenly in the Court, being infected with the sweating sicknesse. The same happening to diuers other Courtiers, and the infection spreading it selfe over *London*, the Terme was adiourned, and the King faine to keepe a running Court. But these were the accidents of the ensuing yeare.

M 2

Anno

1527.

War proclaimed
against
the Emperour.

1527

The Emperour

of the

1527

The Emperour

of the

1527

The Emperour

of the

1527

1528.

Anno Dom. 1528. Reg. 20.

1528.

The incon-
stancie of the
Pope.

POPE CLEMENT was of himselfe naturally slow: but his owne ends made him beyond the infirmity of his nature protract time in this cause concerning the Kings Divorce. Bearing himselfe as neuter betweene the Emperor and the French King, hee makes them both become iealous of him. And war being renewed in *Italy*, hee perceives himselfe likely againe to become a prey to the Conquerour. Which if it should happen, hee must betake himselfe to the King of *England*, of whose helpe hee was certaine, as long as his cause did vncertainly hang in suspense. But if hee should determine in the behalfe of the King, would he in gratitude be as beneficiall, as hope (or feare of offending) had made him? That he much doubted.

These thoughts possessing the Pope, CÆSAR'S affaires in *Italy* began to decline, almost all the Townes throughout the Realme of *Naples* out of hatred to the insolent *Spaniard*, and affection to the French, making offer of their Keyes, and receiuing Garisons of French. CLEMENT therefore did not now much stand in awe of the Emperour, much against whose minde he was intreated to send Legate into *England* LAVRENCE CAMPEGIUS Cardinall and Bishop of *Salisbury*, who together with the Cardinall of *Yorke* should have the hearing of this Cause so long controverted to no purpose. And the more to testifie his affection to the King, he did by a Decretall Bull (but privately drawne) pronounce the Kings marriage with CATHARINE to bee void. This Bull was committed to the Legate, with these instructions, That having shewed it to the King and the

Cardinall
Campegius
sent into
England.

1528.

the Cardinall of Yorke. Hee should withall signifie to them, that he had authoritie to publish it: but not to give sentence, vntill hee received new instructions; telling him, that he was content the King should enioy the benefit of it (and it may be hee was then so minded) but that it stood him vpon to haue this businesse delayed, vntill he had sufficiently secured himselfe from the Emperour. These were the pretences of the old Fox to the Legate. But his meaning was to make vse of all seasons, and to turne with the weather. The ninth of *October* to London comes the Legate, the King having given order to the Citie for his solemne entertainment. But the old mans infirmitie frustrated their preparations: hee was grievously tormented with the gout, and would bee privately brought into the Citie. After a few dayes rest, carried in a chaire, he was brought to the King's presence, to whom his Secretary made a Latin Oration, wherein having much complained of the extreme crueltie of the Imperials in the sacking of *Rome*; he vsed many words to signifie, that the Kings pious bounty shewed in his liberally relieving them in so needfull a season was most acceptable to the Pope and the whole Colledge of Cardinals. To this speech EDWARD FOX (afterward Bishop of *Hereford*) returned an answer in Latine, wherein he declared, *That his Maiestie was much grieved at his Holinesse calamitie, forasmuch as man is naturally touched with a feeling of anothers miseries. That He had not onely performed what could bee expected from him as a man; but had also done the part of a friend for a friend, and what was due from a Prince to CHRIST'S Vicar on earth. He did therefore hope, that in regard of his filiall obedience to the Holy Sea, if it should happen that He should stand in need of its assistance and authoritie, his Holinesse would be pleased readily to grant those things, which it might be seeme a Sonne to craue of the common Mother.*

1528.

ther. Thus much passed in publique. The King and the Legates conferring in private, CAMPEGIVS assured the King of the Popes forwardnesse to pleasure him. CAMPEGIVS was indeed no bad man, and spake truly, what hee thought. For CLEMENT knowing how difficult a matter it was to deceive a man that was no foole, by one conscious of the guile, and that was not deceiued himselfe; made the Legate belecue, that in this matter of the Divorce hee would be readie to doe for the King whatsoever hee should demand.

After these passages, the Legates spent sixe whole moneths in consultation only concerning their manner of proceeding in the Kings Divorce. In the meane time the King vnderstanding, that among his subiects, but especially the women kinde, this his action was much traduced, as if Hee tooke this course more to satisfie his Lust, then his Conscience; to give a stop to all farther rumours, having assembled all the Nobles of the Realme, Iudges, Lawiers, and as many of the better sort of Commons as could conveniently attend, vpon the eight of November made an Oration to this effect:

*The Kings
Speech con-
cerning his
Divorce.*

*Twentie yeares have almost run their course
(faithfull and loving Subiects) since We first
began Our Raigne among you: In all which
tract of time Wee haue by Gods assistance so be-
haved Our Selfe, that Wee hope Wee haue nei-
ther given you cause to complaine, nor Our E-
nemies to glory. No foraine power hath inde-
voured ought against you, but to his owne losse;
neither have Wee employed Our Armes any
where, but Wee haue triumphantly erected Our
glo-*

1528.

glorious trophies. So that whether you consider the sweet fruits of plentiful Peace, or the glory of Our warlike exploits, We dare boldly avouch, Wee have shewed Our Selfe not unworthy of Our Ancestors, whom (without offence bee it spoken) Wee have in all points equalled. But when wee reflect vpon the necessary end of Our fraile life, We are surprised with feare, least the miseries of future times should so obscure the splendour and memory of Our present felicitie, that as the Romans did after the death of Augustus, so you may hereafter bee forced to wish with teares, either that VVe had never beene, or might have perpetually lived to governe you. VVe see many here present, who in regard of their age might have beene parties in the late Civill warres, which for eightie yeares together so miserably rended this Realme, no man knowing whom to acknowledge for his Sovereigne, untill the happie Coniunction of Our Parents did not resolve, but tooke away all cause of farther doubt. Consider then, whether after Our death you can hope for better dayes, then when the Factions of Yorke and Lancaster distracted this Realme. VVe have a Daughter, whom VVe the more affectionately tender, because shee is Our sole Issue. But VVe would have you know, that having lately treated with
Our

1528.

Our deare Brother of France, concerning a match betweene this Our Daughter, and Henrie Duke of Orleans his yonger sonne, both of Us were well pleased with this alliance, vntill one of his Privy Counsell made a question of Our Daughters birth; for it was much to bee doubted, least she were to be held illegitimate, being begotten of Us and that Mother, who had before beene married to Our deceased Brother: saying, it was vtterly repugnant to the Word of God, that any one should marry his Brothers Widow; wherefore he was of opinion, that this match with Our most beloved Spouse was to be deemed no other then incestuous. How grievously this relation afflicted Vs, God the Searcher of Our hearts knowes. For these words did seeme to question, not onely Our deare Consort, and Our Daughter, but euen the very estate of Our soule, which after death must necessarily undergo eternall and inevitable torments, if being admonished of so horrible an Incest, We should not indeavour an amendement; And for your parts, you cannot but foresee how great dangers by reason of this doubt do threaten you and your Posterity. Being therefore desirous (as the case indeed required) to bee resolved in this point, Wee first conferred with Our Friends, and then with the most learned in the Lawes
both

1528.

both Divine and Humane; who indeed were so farre from satisfying Us, that they left Us more perplexed. Wee therefore had recourse to the Holy Apostolique See, to the Decree whereof VVe thinke it fitting, that Our Selfe and all others should bee obedient. To this and no other end (We call immortall God to witnesse) have wee procured this Venerable Legate. As for the Queene Our most beloved Consort, whatsoever women may tattle, or ill willers mutter in private, We do willingly and ingenuously professe, that in noblenesse of Mind she far transcends the greatnesse of her Birth: so that if wee were now at liberty and free for a second choice, We take God to witnesse, among all the plenty of the worlds Beauties wee would not make choice of any other (if lawfully wee might) then of this Our now Queene, one in regard of her mildnesse, wisdom, humilicity, sanctity of minde, and conversation (We are verily perswaded) not to be paralleled. But when We consider, that We are bestowed on the world to other ends, then the pursuite of Our owne pleasures: We have thought it meet rather to vndergo the hazard of an vncertaine iudgement, then to commit impiety against God the liberall Giver of all blessings, and ingratitude against Our Countrey, the weale and safetie

N where.

1529.

whereof each one should prefer before his private life or fortunes. Thus much have you heard from Our owne mouth. And we hope, that you will hereafter give no heed either to seditious detractions, or idle rumours of the people.

This Oration tooke according to the divers dispositions of the hearers : some lamenting the King's, but many more the Queenes case, every one doubting, and fearefull of the event. Some few weary of the present estate desired a change even to worse, rather then a continuance of the present. And by these the course the King had taken (not approved by the vulgar) as pious and imposed on him by his owne and the publique necessitie, was according to the nature of hopefull flattery most highly applauded.

Anno Dom. 1529. Reg. 21.

1529.
The suite of
the Kings
Divorce.

AT length about the beginning of Aprill the King residing at *Bridewell*, at the Blacke Friers in *London* began the suit concerning the King's Divorce. There was that to be scene, the like whereof the Histories of no other Nation afford : A most puissant Monarch, actually Sovereigne and bearing rule in his Realme, being cited by the voice of of an Apparitor, made his appearance personally before the Iudges. The ceremonies in a matter so vnusuall, and indeed otherwise of great moment, require an accurate and large relation beyond the intended shortnesse of this Historie. A Chaire of State where-to was an ascent of some steps was placed above for the King, and by the side of it another (but a little lower)

1529.

lower) for the Queene. Before the King, at the fourth step sate the Legates, but so, as the one seemed to sit at his right hand, the other at the left. Next to the Legates stood the Apparitors and other Officers of the Court, and among them GARDINER, (after Bishop of *Winchester*) appointed Register in this businesse. Before the Iudges within the limits of the Court sate the Archbishop of *Canterbury* with all the other Bishops of the Realme. At the farther end of each side were the Advocates and Proctors retained for each partie: for the King, SAMPSON after Bishop of *Chichester*, BELL after Bishop of *Worcester*, TREGONEL, and PETERS Father to the now Lord PETERS, all Doctours of Law: For the Queene, FISHER Bishop of *Rochester*, and STANDISH Bishop of *Saint Asaph*, with RIDLEY (Doctor whether of Divinitie or Law I know not, but one) who had the esteeme of a very learned man. All things being thus formally ordered, the Apparitor willed by the Register to cite the King, cried, HENRY King of England come into the Court, who answered, *Here I am*. The Queene being likewise cited (CATHARINE Queene of England come into the Court) made no answer, but rising from her seate went directly to the King, to whom on her knees, purposely raising her voice that every one might heare her, shee is reported to have spoken to this effect:

Sir, I humbly beseech your Maiestie so to deale with me at this present, that I may neither have cause to complaine of Iniustice, nor that you have debarred me the favour of your wonted Clemency. I am here a Woman and a Stranger, destitute of Friends and Counsaile, so that plead for my selfe I cannot, and whom

*The Queens
speech to the
King before
the Legates.*

1529.

I may else employ, I know not. My kindred and Friends are farre off, neither can I safely rely on any here in a matter of so great consequence. They that are here retained for mee, are no other, then whom you have beene pleased to appoint, and are your owne Subiects, who if they would deale vprightly (which few will beleeve they dare do) yet can they not here withstand your determinate will and pleasure. But what have wretched I committed, that after twenty yeares spent in peaceable wedlocke, and having borne you so many Children, you should now at length thinke of putting me away? I was I confesse the Widow of your Brother, if at least she may be accompted a Widow, whom her husband never knew. For I take Almighty God to witnesse, and I am perswaded you cannot be ignorant of it, that I came to your bed an unspotted Virgin; from which time how I have behaved my selfe, I am content to appeale even to them, whosoever they are, that do wish mee least good. Certainly whatsoever their Verdict may be, you have alwayes found me a most faithfull (servant I may better say, then) wife, having never to my knowledge withstood your pleasure so much as in shew. I alwayes loved those, whom I thought you favoured, without questioning their deserts. I so carefully farthe-
red

1529.

red and procured your pleasures, that I rather feare, I have offended God in too much endeavouring your content, then that I have any way failed in the least performance of my duty. By this my observance vnto you, if so be you ever thought it worthy of regard, by our common Issue, by the memory of my Father, whom you sometimes held deare, I do humbly beg, that you would be pleased to defer the farther hearing of this cause, vntill having sent into Spaine, I may thence be advised by my Friends, in this case what course to take. If then in Iustice it shall be thought meet to rend me from you, a part of whom I have so long beene (the apprehension whereof doth more terrifie me, then death) I will even in this continue my long observed course of obedience. But as often as I bethinke me of the wisdom of Our Parents, by whose indeuours and consent this Match was ratified, I cannot but hope very well of my cause. Your Father was for his admirable wisdom accounted a second Salomon, neither can Spaine throughout the whole Successions of the Kings of so many Kingdomes produce any one, who may parallell my Father Ferdinand: and what kinde of Counsaillours must we thinke these Princes had, that all should as it were conspire to hurle Us into the miseries of an incestuous
Mar-

1529.

Marriage? No question was then made concerning the lawfulness of this Match, and yet those times afforded learned men, yea and (whereof to my harme I have had experimental knowledge) in holinesse of life and love of the Truth far surpassing the Flatterers of these times. (Which last wordes shee therefore spake, because shee had heard, that all the Bishops of the Realme had by a common Decree pronounced against the Marriage. And indeed such a Decree subscribed and sealed by each of them was afterward in the presence of the King read publicuely in the Court, Fisher Bishop of Rochester excepting against it, who denied, that hee had assented to it, and objected forgery to the Archbishop of Canterbury for putting to it in steed of Bishop Fishers, a false Seale and a counterfeit hand.)

*The Queene
departeth.*

*The Queene having spoken thus much, arising, after her due obeisance to the King, when every one expected shee would have returned to her seate, made hast out of the Court. Every one amazedly wonders what the Queene intends. But before shee had gone far, the King commanded the Apparitor to call her backe againe: The Apparitor obeying, the Gentleman who supported her, told her she was called; to whom shee replied, *I heare it very well, but go you on: I cannot hope for iustice in this Court: let them proceed against me in what manner they will, I am resolved not to stay.* So away shee went, and would never after be per-*

1529.

persuaded to make her appearance either personally or by a Proctor. After she was gone, the King commended her in those termes, that might besit a great affection and her excellent vertues: withall protesting how desirous he was to continue in that estate, so that neither his soule nor the Common-wealtb might be endangered by it. Here WOLSEY interrupted him, beseeching his Maiestie, that forasmuch as it was bruied, that hee had persuaded Him to this Divorce; His Maiesty would vouchsafe to signifie to the present Assembly how farre this report was true. The King, although that hee knew that in this fame lied not, yet to secure his Favourite from the generall hate of the people, affirmed, the Bishop of Bayeux having first made scruple of it, to have first advised him to this course, and that the Bishop of Lincolne his Confessor, and other Bishops with whom he had conferred, did the like. These were the Acts of the first day.

This case was for a moneth or two held in controverisie, the Kings Advocates alledging, that

*Reasons for
the Divorce.*

It was not in the Popes power to ratifie this Marriage, which as prohibited by the Law of Nature the Scripture had pronounced unlawfull: That Catharine had beene lawfully married to Prince Arthur the King's elder Brother, and that the Nuptials were publickly solemnized, no man could deny: and many circumstances did manifest the consummation of the Marriage by a carnall coniunction.

On the otherside the Queenes Advocates maintained,

*Reasons against the
Divorce.*

The Law which forbad the Iewes to marry their Brothers wife, to bee Iudiciall and not

1529.

not Morall, and therefore abrogated by Christ: but so far forth as the Church had retained it, it was by the authority of the same Church dispensable, especially being they were confident, that the forealleged consummation could no way be proved.

*The Popes
inconstancy.*

Thus each side pleaded, and time passed on. The King observes Cardinall CAMPEGIUS to go more coldly to worke then he was wont, from whom Hee before this expected the promised decision. But fortune had since that turned her wheele. The Emperours affaires prospered in Italy, and CLEMENT knew it was not the way to wipe out the remembrance of an old offence by committing a new. Hee found some other pretence to send one FRANCIS CAMPANA into England; but his chiefe errand was to will CAMPEGIUS to burne the Bull, whereby the King's marriage had before beene pronounced void, and to returne to Rome with speed. But the newes of the Popes sicknesse at the same time made him deferre the execution of his Mandate. For if CLEMENT should die, the Cardinall might with safetie gratifie the King, who had conferred on him the Bishopricke of Sarisbury, and to whom the Cardinall had promised successe answerable to his desires: And if hee should permit the King to be thus illuded, he feared he might be accompted, not onely ingratefull, but also treacherous. But hee shortly vnderstood the Pope was well, whose Mandate he must obey, and the Bull as if for *Hereſie* must be condemned to the fire.

In the meane time the King, who was deeply in loue with ANNE BOLEN, according to the nature of Lovers counting each minute by the houre, quickly

ly resented this change, and never rested, vntill hee knew the whole carriage of the matter. Then first fell his wrath like thunder on WOLSEY, whose wit had hitherto made all his proiects feasible: And hee could not belceve, but that it was in his power to effect this also. Here I cannot choose but cry out with Comœdian;

Ὡς ἀρχαλὸν ἀράγμ' εἶναι, ὦ Ζεῦ καὶ Θεοί,
Δύλον γένεσθαι παραφροῦντος δεσπότου;

LOVE and yee Gods, how hard a thing
It is, to serve a raging King.

Full twenty yeares had WOLSEY served the King, behaving himselfe so, that hee grew powerfull and wealthy beyond a private fortune, and to the rest of the King's Titles had procured the addition of that rich one of, *a good Prince*. For as often as I consider how laudably HENRY had hitherto ruled, and behold the calamities of ensuing times, I cannot but accord with them, who ascribe the sway which he did beare over all the Princes of Christendome to the excellency of WOLSEY his counsailes. But WOLSEY being taken away, to whom shall we impute those effects of Lust, Tyrannie, and Avarice, two Wives killed, two put away, so many (and among them many of the greater sort) put to death for their Religion only, extremitie only differing in the manner vsed by Hanging against Papists, by Fire against Heretiques, (these were the termes of those dayes) & the Church (or rather the Common-wealth) horribly spoiled and robbed of her Patrimony? Certainly had WOLSEY sate at the Sterne, the King had never like a Ship destitute of a Pilot, beene carried to and fro with such contrary and vncertaine motions. But inordinate

O

great-

1529.

Wolsey fals.

1529.

greatnesse is alwayes a burthen to it selfe, the waight whercof is augmented by the vsuall attendance of publique *enuy* and *hatred* the misbegotten Elfes of long and powerfull happinesse.

WOLSEY, the King once offended, began presently to totter, and at his first frowne as at the roaring of a Lion (before any harder course was taken with him) was so dejected, that although he after seemed a little to lift vp his head, yet was hee never able to stand on his feet. Nay, the King being once alienated from him would never after admit him to his presence. Behold power of base Detraction (yet I will not exclude the the greatnesse of the Cardinals wealth already devoured in conceit) which wipes away the remembrance of the faithfull service of so many yeares, and the consideration of so great glory purchased to the King by WOLSEY's labours. I am not ignorant what things were objected against him. But they carry so little shew of probability, that I should much suspect his iudgement, that would give any credit to them. Vntill it was knowne that the King intraged at the slow proceedings in the cause of his Divorce did day and night breath out against him threats and revenge, no man ever preferred Bill against him, which considering the vsuall severe courses held by our Parliaments, must needs acquit him of Abuse of Power. As for the causes of the King's anger, wee will derive them rather from his owne discontents, then WOLSEY's faultinesse.

The King by this time knew the treachery of the dissembling Pope. Hee had nere five yeares wandered in the Labyrinth of the Court of Rome, and could find no clue to lead him out. He therefore determined to make a way where he could not find one, and like ALEXANDER by force to vndoe that Gordian knot, which by wit and labour hee could not. To

WOL.

1529.

WOLSEY therefore hee communicated his intent of marrying another whether the Pope were willing or no, wishing him withall to finde out some course or other, whereby CAMPEGIVS his Colleague (notwithstanding the late Mandates to the contrary) might be drawne to give sentence on his side. Many things might be pretended to excuse the deed, but chiefly the feare of the King's high displeasure, which peradventure hee should feele too, vnlesse hee assented to the King's iust request. WOLSEY his answer to this I cannot relate. But this is certaine, that WOLSEY, whether for that he did not approve of the King's intended course seeming (as the times were then) full of rashnesse and insolence, or that he would not vndertake the attempting of his Colleague, or that (as SLEIDAN writes) the King had notice, that the Cardinall had advised the Pope not to approve of the Divorce from CATHARINE, forasmuch as the King was then resolved to marry another infected with *Lutheranisme*: WOLSEY I say was so sharply taken vp and threatned by the King, that even then you might reade in his face and gestures the symptomes of his waining fortune. For the Cardinall at that time returning from the Court by water, the Bishop of *Carlile* being with him in the same Barge, complained of the heate which was then extraordinary: to whom WOLSEY replied, *My Lord, if you had beene but now in my place, you would have found it hot indeed.* And as soone as hee came home, he put off his clothes, and went sicke to bed. Before hee had reposed himselfe an houre and halfe, the Viscount *Rochfort* came to him, and in the King's Name willed, that hee and his Colleague should instantly repaire to the Queene, and exhort her not to contend any longer with the King, for that it would be more for her good and the honour of them both

1529.

*The Legates
repaire to
the Queene.*

*Their confe-
rence with
her.*

Her answer.

to submit herselfe to the King's pleasure, then to vndergo the disgrace of a publique iudgement. For it was now brought to that push, that longer deferred it could not be. The Cardinall advertised of the King's pleasure did arise, and with his Colleague went to the Queene, who having notice of their comming, went forth and met them. After mutuall salutations the Cardinals desired shee would vouchsafe a few words in private, but the Queene refused to entertaine any conference with them but where she might have witnesses of what passed. WOLSEY then began to speake in Latine, but the Queene interrupted him, willing, that although she vnderstood Latin, yet hee should speake in English. So in the names of both Legates he began a speech in English, wherein hee professed a great deale of obseruance and dutie to her, and that they came to no other end, but to advise her for her good. The Queene answered them much after this manner:

As for your good will, I thanke you: as for your advise, I will give you the bearing. But the matter (I beleeeve) about which you come, is of so great importance, that it will require a great deale of deliberation, and the helpe of a braine surpassing that of feminine weaknesse. You see my employments (shewing them a skaine of white thred hanging about her necke) in these I spend my time among my Maides, which indeed are none of the greatest Counsailers: yet I haue none other in England, and Spaine (where they are on whom I dare relie) God wot is farre enough hence: yet I am

con-

content to heare what you have to say, and will give you an answer when we can conveniently.

1529.

So taking the Cardinall by the hand, she brought them into a withdrawing roome, where having attentively heard out their message, shee made this reply :

That now after twenty yeares the lawfulnessse of my marriage should be questioned, I cannot sufficiently wonder, especially when I consider who were the Authours of it: Many of them are yet alive both in England and Spaine: and what kind of men the rest were, who are now dead; the world knowes: Henry and Ferdinand our Parents the most sage Princes of their time, and their Counsaile such without doubt, who for their wisdom were approved of as fit servants for so iudicious Masters, besides the Pope, whose Dispensation I have to shew, and which was procured by my Father at no small rate. But what thing is there so sincere and firme, which enuy will not seeke to blast. Of these my miseries I can accuse none but you, my Lord of Yorke. Because I could not away with your monstrous pride, excessive riot, whoredome, and intolerable oppression, therefore do I now suffer. And yet not only for this: for some part of your hatred I am beholding to my Nephew the Emperour, whom, for that he did not satisfie your insatiable ambition by advancing

1529.

vancing you to the Papacy, you have ever since maligned. You threatned to be revenged on him and his Friends, and you have performed your promise; for you have beene the onely incendiarie and plotter of all the mischiefe and wars against him these late yeares. And I am his Aunt, whom how you have persecuted, by raising this new doubt, God only knowes, to whose iudgement only I commend my cause.

This Shee spake in French, as it seemed very much moved, and would not endure to heare WOLSEY speake in defence of himselfe, but courteously dismissed CAMPEGIUS.

It was now June, and the Haruest drawing on, the Legates thought it high time to make an end of this suite. A day therefore being prefixed, many of the Nobility, and a multitude of the Commonaltie repaired to the Court, verily expecting, that iudgement should have beene given for the King. HENRY (having I know not how conceived some hope of the Legates good intents) caused a seat to bee placed for himselfe behind the hangings, vnder the covert whereof he might vnscene heare whatsoever was spoken or passed in Court. The Cardinals being seated, the King's Advocates earnestly requiring that sentence might be given on their side, CAMPEGIUS made this Oration well bebecoming the constancy of a man not vnworthy of the place he supplied.

Cardinall
Campegius
his Oration.

I have heard and diligently examined whatsoever hath beene alleaged in the King's behalfe. And indeed the arguments are such, that I might and ought pronounce for the King, if
two

1529.

two reasons did not controll and curbe my desires of doing his Maieſtie right: The Queene (you ſee) withdrawes her ſelfe from the iudgement of this Court, having before vs excepted againſt the partialitie of the place, where (ſhe ſaith) nothing can be determined without the conſent of the Plaintife. Moreover his Holineſſe (who is the fountaine and life of our authoritie) hath by a meſſenger given vs to vnderſtand, that hee hath reſerved this cauſe for his owne hearing: ſo that if wee would never ſo faine proceed any farther, peradventure wee cannot, I am ſure wee may not. Wherefore (which only remaineth) I doe heere diſſolve the Court: Other then this (as the caſe ſtands) I cannot do: and I beſeech them, whom this Cauſe concernes, to take in good part what I have done. Which if they will not, although it may trouble me, yet not ſo much, as to regard the threats of any one. I am a feeble old man, and ſee death ſo neere me, that in a matter of ſo great conſequence neither hope, nor feare, nor any other reſpect, but that of the Supreme Iudge, before whom I finde my ſelfe ready to appeare, ſhall ſway me.

How the King was pleaſed at this you may eaſily conceive. It is reported, that the Duke of Suffolke knowing the King to be preſent, and conſcious of his infirmitie, in a great rage leaping out of his chaire boun-

1529.

bountifully bestowed a volley of curses vpon the Legates, saying *It was never well with England, since it had any thing to doe with Cardinalls.* To whom WOLSEY returned a few wordes, saying, *That it was not in his power to proceed without Authoritie from the Pope, and that no man ought to accuse them for not doing that, whereto their power did not extend.*

But the Kings implacable anger admitted of no excuse; WOLSEY himselfe must become a sacrifice to appease it. As for CAMPEGIVS, hee tasted neverthelesse of the King's bountie, and had leave to depart. But at Calais his carriages were searched by the King's command. The pretence was, that WOLSEY intending an escape, had by CAMPEGIVS convaied his treasures for Rome. But the Bull was the Treasure so much sought after. The King could not beleive it was burned; and if it were found, it was enough to countenance his second marriage. But found it was not, no nor scarce so much money in all the Cardinals carriages, as had beene given him by the King.

WOLSEY his rising and his fall were alike so-daine; neither of them by degrees, but as the Lion gets his prey, by leapes. Shortly after the departure of his Colleague, vpon the eightene of October, the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke in his Maiesties name commanded him to surrender the Great Seale. But he pleaded, *That the King had by Patent made him Lord Chancellour during terme of life, and by consequence committed the custodie of the great Seale to him: Neverthelesse hee would resigne his place, if his Maiestie so commanded.* But hee thought it not fit, having received the Seale from the King, to deliver it to any other, but vpon especiall Command. The Lords returning to Windsor where the Court then was, the next day brought the King's

Wolsey discharged of
the great
Seale.

King's Letters, whose Mandate the Cardinall forthwith obeyed. In this Dignitie the six and twentieth of October Sir THOMAS MORE succeeded, whose admirably generall learning is so well knowne to the world, that I shall not need to speake any thing of it.

WOLSEY being removed from the Chancellorship is presently after accused of Treason, and that (which hath beene seldome seene) in the Parliament, that so without hearing hee might be condemned by Act. But hee perceiving the drift of his Adversaries, procured one of his attendants THOMAS CROMWELL (hee who afterward became so potent) to be elected a Burgesse of the Lower House. The Cardinall being daily informed by him what things were laid to his charge, did by letter instruct him what to answer. CROMWELL although no Scholler, was very wise and eloquent. Which good parts hee so faithfully imployed in the defence of his Lord, that the House acquitted him, and himselfe became famous; opening withall by these meanes a way to those Honours, to which the current of a few yeares advanced him. Even they who hated WOLSEY, honoured CROMWELL, whose wisdom, industrie, but above all, fidelitie in defending his dejected Lord, was admirable.

Now the Cardinall because he would not be found a Traitor, is false into a *Premunire*. Whereupon he is thrust as it were naked forth his owne house, his great wealth is seised on by the King's Officers, and hee faine to borrow furniture for his house, and money for his necessary expences. Iudges are sent into the house whereto he was confined, to take his answer to the objected crime, which was, that without leave from the King hee had dared so many yeares to exercise his power Legatine. To which calumny (for

1529.

Sir Thomas
Moore Lord
Chancellor.

The Cardinall
accused
of treason.

1529.

Wolseyes
speech to the
Iudges.

can any man beleive it to be other?) Hee made this answer.

I am now sixty yeares old, and have spent my dayes in his Maiesties service, neither shunning paines, nor indeavouring any thing more, then (next my Creatour) to please Him. And is this that hainous offence, for which I am at this age deprived of my estate, and forced as it were to beg my bread from doore to doore? I expected some accusation of a higher straine, as treason, or the like; not for that I know my selfe conscious of any such matter, but that his Maiesties wisdom is such, as to know, it little be- seemes the constancy & magnanimity of a King for a slight fault to condemne, and that without hearing, an ancient servant, for so many yeares next his Person, greatest in his favour, and to inflict a punishment on him more horrid then death. What man is he, who is so base minded, that hee had not rather a thousand times perish, then see a thousand men (so many my Family numbreth) of whose faithfull service hee hath had long triall, for the most part to perish before his eyes? But finding nothing else objected, I conceive great hope, that I shall as easily breake this machination of combined envy, as was that late one against me in the Parliament concerning Treason. It is well knowne to his Maiesty

(of

(of whose iustice I am confident) that I would not presume to execute my power Legatine, before he had beene pleased to ratifie it by his Royall Assent given vnder his Seale; which notwithstanding I cannot now produce, that and all my goods (as you well know) being taken from me. Neither indeed if I could, would I produce it. For to what end should I contend with the King? Go therefore, and tell his Maiesty, that I acknowledge all that I have (but alas what speake I of what I have, Who indeed have nothing left me?) or whatsoever I had, to be derived from his Royall Bounty, and do thinke it good reason, that he should reuoke his gifts, if he thinke me vnworthy of them. Why then do I not remit my cause to his Maiesties arbitrement, at his pleasure to be either condemned or absolved? To him then if you will have me acknowledge my fault, behold, I will make short worke for you, I confesse it. The King knowes my innocencie, so that neither my owne confession, nor the calumnies of my aduersaries can deceiue him. I am therefore content to confesse my selfe guilty. His Maiesty from the fountaine of his naturall Clemency doth often derive the stremes of his mercy to the delinquent: And I know, though I should not desire it, Hee will regard my innocence.

1529.

*Christ
Church in
Oxford.*

Vpon his confession the penalty of the Law was forthwith inflicted, only he was not, as the Law requires, committed to perpetuall imprisonment. The furniture of his house of infinite value, incredible store of plate & great treasure had beene already seised to the King's vse. There remained nothing but the Lands wherewith he intended to indow his Colledge, the greatest part whereof were his owne purchase, the rest were the demesnes of the demolished Monasteries. These Lands amounted to above foure thousand pounds *per annum*, and were all confiscated. But God would not suffer so brave a work to perish. The King afterward bestowed on the Colledge in *Oxford* called *Christ Church*, revenues for the maintenance of a Deane, eight Prebendaries, a hundred Students, twelue Chaplaines and Singing men, and foure and twenty Almes men, for which this Colledge acknowledgeth **HENRY** the Eighth for its Founder. But the King arrogated to himselfe what was truly to be ascribed to the Cardinall. Who was now in the case of the poore Mouse, whom the Cat intends to deuoure. The King had marked him out for destruction, yet permitted him to live, but so, as that he could never escape, and yet never despaire of escaping. Scarce any day throughout those few moneths passed, wherein hee indured not something or other, that would have animated a senselesse thing with anger: neither was the Cardinall composed of patience, yet did he never despaire. His sorrowes were alwayes tempred with some mixture of ioy. For he was often visited from the King, but that very secretly, and commonly by night: often certified of the King's affection towards him, in token whereof the Visitants did sometimes from the King present him with a Iewell or some such thing, willing him to be of good comfort, for that shortly, they would assure him, he should be raised to his former degree

degree of favour and power. Adversity at length prevailing, hee fell into a disease, from the extremitie whereof few expected his recovery. And the King demanding of one of his Physicians (whose patient the Cardinall was) what disease WOLSEY had, the Doctor replied, *What disease soever he hath, if You desire his death, You may be secure, for I promise You he will not live to see the end of three dayes more.* The King striking the table with his hand cried out, *I had rather loose twenty thousand pounds then he should die: Make hast therefore you, and as many other Physicians as are about the Court, and by all meanes indeavour his recovery.* The Physician then certifying him, that he was sicke, more in minde, then body: the King dispatched away a Gentleman with a Ring, which WOLSEY had formerly given to him, willing him withall to tell the Cardinall, that the King's anger was now past, who was sorry that he had so long given eare to detraction: and that he should shortly finde, that the King's affection towards him was no lesse, then when hee flourished most in the sunshine of his favour. The same comfortable words being againe and againe ingeminated by divers others sent for that purpose, the Cardinall in a few dayes recovered his former health.

At Court each one aspired to rise by WOLSEY his fall. But now iealous least the King intended a reall and sincere reconciliation, and fearing revenge from him whom they had injured, worke all their wits to supplant him. At, or about London he was too neere the Court, some trick must be had to send him farther. *Winchester* (the Bishopricke whereof hee held in *commendam*) was not farre enough off. Why then should he not (said they) being not detained at London as Lord Chancellour, betake himselfe to the government of his Archbishopricke of *Yorke*? So having a thousand pound assigned him by the King

(whole

1529.

Wolsey falls sicke.

Wolsey is confined to Yorke.

1529.

(whose Counsaile thought a thousand markes sufficient) about the end of *March* in the ensuing yeare hee set forward towards *Yorke*. Of all his Livings they leave him only the Archbishopricke of *Yorke* wherewith to maintaine him, the revenues whereof might be valued at foure thousand pounds *per annum*. The speech of *SENECA* concerning *APICIUS* why may I not apply to the present estate of *WOLSEY*? *How great was his Luxurie, who deemed the income of foure thousand pound povertie?*

And now it were requisite that we should proceed to the yeare 1530. But let vs first behold the end of this great Cardinall. That Summer hee spent at *Ca-wood* a Mannor house belonging to the Sea of *Yorke*, where by his mildnesse, iustice, and liberality, hee did so win the hearts of his Diocesans, that hee was both admired and loved. He seemed to be much delighted with this solitary confinement for that having hitherto beene tossed in the Court to and fro as in a tempest, hee had now escaped, not from shipwracke to a rocke, but to his desired haven of repose. Yet notwithstanding vpon any the least hope of recovering his former power (although hee professed that converted by an Anchorite of *Richmond* he had bid adieu to the vanities of the world) hee could not conceale the greatnesse of his ioy. That he failed of his hopes (which indeed were none of the least) I cannot assent to them, who impute it to the importunity of his potent adversaries. For to what end served so many messages full of gracious & reconciliatorie promises, but ever intermixed with insufferable disgraces the forerunners of a dire Catastrophe? Certainly to no other, then that he might bee wrought one way or other to approue of, and give sentence for the King's Divorce (at least) as Archbishop *CRAMER* after did.

But this course not prevailing, they intend a second accu-

accusation of Treason. To this purpose the Earle of Northumberland is sent to apprehend, and (as he was amazed at this sudaine change) bring him to his answer to London. But by the way he fell sick of a disease, which at Leicester Abbey secured him from all other. Being neere his end, it is reported Sir WILLIAM KINGSTON (who lately came thither with some of the King's Guard) exhorted him to be of good comfort, for that the King (in whose name he saluted him) had sent for him to no other end, but that hee might cleere himselfe from those things, which malice and detraction had forged against him: neither did hee doubt, but that shortly hee should see him more potent then ever, if out of pusillanimity he gave not too much scope to the violence of his discontented passions. Whereto the Cardinall in these his last words replied:

I am as truly glad to beare of his Maiesties health, as I truly know my death to be at hand. I have now bin eight dayes together troubled with a Flux accompanied with a continuall Fever, which kind of disease, if within eight dayes it remit nothing of its wonted violence, by the consent of all Physicians threatneth no lesse then death, peradventure an evill beyond death, distraction. But growne weake, and my disease raging more and more, I do each minute expect, when God will be pleased to free this sinfull soule from this loathsome prison of the body. But should my life be a litle prolonged, do you thinke I perceive not what traps are laid for me? You Sir VVilliam (if I mistake not) are Lieutenant

1529.

The Cardinall is apprehended.

His last words.

1529.

nant of the Tower, and I guesse for what you come. But God hath iustly rewarded mee for neglecting my due service to him, and wholly applying my selfe to his Maiesties pleasure. Woe is me wretch and sot that I am, who have beene vngratefull to the King of Kings, whom if I had served with that due devout observance that befits a Christian, hee would not have forsaken me in the evening of my age. I would I might be a generall example (even to the King himselfe) how sliperily they stand in this world, who do not above all things rely vpon the firme support of Gods Favour and Providence. Salute his Maiestie from me, and deliver this my last petition vnto him, which is, That he live mindfull of the triall he must undergo before Gods high Tribunal: so shall hee by the secret testimony of his owne conscience free mee from those crimes wherewith my adversaries seeke to burthen me.

He dieth.

And is buried.

His greatness.

More he would have spoken, but his speech failed him, and death presently ensued. His body apparrelled in his Pontificall Robes, after it had all that day (for he expired at the very breake of day) beene exposed to open view, was at midnight without any solemnity buried in our Ladies Chappell in the Church of the Monastery. Thus unhappily ended Cardinall WOLSEY, his long happy life; then whom England, no nor I belceve all Europe, if you except the Bishops of Rome, ever saw a more potent Prelate. His retinue consisted of neere about a thousand persons, among which were one Earle, commonly nine Barons, many Knights

1529.

*His build-
ings.*

Knights and Gentlemen, and of Officers belonging to his house above foure hundred, besides their servants, which far exceeded the former number. His Chappell was served by a Deane, a Subdeane, a Chanter, thirty five Singers, whereof thirteene were Clergy, twelve Lay, and ten Choristers, foure Sextons, beside sixteene Chaplaines (the most sufficient for their learning throughout all *England*) two Crosse-bearers, & as many Piller-bearers. But nothing doth manifest his wealth and greatnesse so much as do his stately and incomparable buildings. Wee have already spoken of his Colledges *Whitehall* (then called *York house*, as belonging to the Archbishop) the place where our Kings do most reside, was almost wholly built by him. *Hampton Court*, the neatest pile of all the King's houses, he raised entirely from the ground, and having furnished it with most rich household stuffe, gave it to the King. It was a gift fitter for a King to take, then for a subject to give. But in the opinion of the vulgar the monument which hee intended for the King far surpassed all these. It was of solid brasse, but vnfinished, and is to be seene in HENRY the Eighth his Chappell in the Church of *Windfore*. That three of his Children reigning after him, none of them vndertooke by perfecting it to cover the (as it were) vnburied bones of their Father, what may wee thinke, but that the excessive charge of it deterred them? But vpon a further inquiry we may more iustly ascribe it to the especiall iudgement of the Divine Providence, who had decreed, that he who had so horribly spoiled the Church, should alone be debarred the honor afforded to each of his Predecessours in the Church. And thus much concerning WOLSEY, who died the thirtieth of November 1530.

In the meane time in *Iune*, Anno 1529. after long debating the matter to and fro, by the mediation of

Q

Louyse

*The peace of
Cambray.*

1529.

Louyse the French Kings Mother, and MARGARET Aunt to the Emperour, these two Princes are drawne to an accord, & a Peace is concluded betweene them at *Cambray*, thence commonly called *The Peace of Cambray*, but by vs *The Peace of Women*. The chiete Conditions whereof, and that any way concerned vs were,

That the French King should giue to the Emperour for the freedome of his Children (who had beene three yeares Hostages in Spaine for their Father) two Millions of Crownes, whereof he should pay foure hundred thousand (due from the Emperor by the League made, Anno 1522.) to Henry and his Sister Mary Daughter of France. Beside which huge summe he should also acquit the Emperor of five hundred thousand, which he did owe to our King for the indemnity of the marriage betweene the Emperour and the Lady Mary the Kings Daughter, whom (having beene long since contracted) hee left, to marry with the Daughter of Portugall: And that hee should vngage and restore to the Emperour the Flower de Lys of gold enriched with precious stones, & a piece of our Saviours Crosse, which Philip, truly called, The Good Duke of Burgoigne the Emperours Father being driven into England by contrary windes, had ingaged to Henry the Seventh for fifty thousand Crownes.

So that the summe to be paid to HENRY amounted

1529.

ted to nine hundred and fifty thousand Crownes, besides fixteene hundred thousand more to be payed to the Emperour at the very instant of the delivery of the *French King's* Children. The totall summe was two millions five hundred fifty thousand Crownes, which of our money make seven hundred sixty five thousand pounds.

FRANCIS not knowing which way suddenly to raise so huge a masse, by his Embassadours intreated our King to be pleased to stay some time for his monyes. But HENRY was much moved, that he had not beene made acquainted with this Treaty: notwithstanding his secret designs made him temper his choler, nay, and with incredible liberality to grant more then was demanded. For hee absolutely forgave him the five hundred thousand Crownes due for the not marrying his Daughter, hee gave the *Flower de Lys* to his Godsonne HENRY Duke of Orleans, and left the other foure hundred thousand to be payed by equall portions in five yeares. The Pope had lately by his Legates deluded HENRY, who was thereupon much discontented not knowing what course to run. And this is thought to be the cause of his so extraordinary liberality toward the *French*.

The King being then in progresse and hunting at *Waltham* it happened that STEPHEN GARDINER Principall Secretary of Estate (after Bishop of *Winton*) and FOX the King's Almoner (after Bishop of *Hereford*) were billeted in the house of a gentleman named CRESSEY, who had sent his two sons to be brought vp at *Cambridge*, vnder the tutelage of THOMAS CRANMER Doctour in Divinity, a man both very learned and vertuous. The plague then spreading it selfe in *Cambridge*, CRANMER with his two Pupils betooke himsele to Master CRESSEY their father his house. Where GARDINER and FOX among o-

*The first occasion of
Cranmers
rising.*

1529.

ther table talke discourfing of the Kings Suite concerning his Divorce, which had so many yeares depended in the Court of *Rome* vndecided, C R A N M E R said, that he wondred the King required not the opinions of the most famous learned men that were any where to be found (of whom the world had many far more learned then the Pope) and followed not their iudgements. What C R A N M E R had as it were let fall by chance they report to the King, who suddenly apprehending it, said that this fellow whosoever he was, had hit the naile on the head, and withall demanding his name, caused C R A N M E R to be sent for, whom he commended for his (but too late) advice, which course if he had taken but five yeares before, hee should now have had an hundred thousand pounds in his purse, which he had vnprofitably in this suite cast away on the Court of *Rome*: he commands C R A N M E R write a Tract concerning this question wherein having drawne together what reasons hee could for the confirmation of his advice, hee should conclude with his owne opinion. C R A N M E R did it very readily, and is therevpon with Sir THOMAS BOLLEN (lately created Earle of *Wiltshire*) C A R N E, S T O K E S L E Y, and B E N E T, Doctours of Law, with others sent on an Embassie to *Rome*. C R A N M E R's booke is to be presented to his Holinesse, and they are commanded to challenge the Court of *Rome* to a disputation wherein the Contents of that book should be maintained; the argument whereof was, *That by the authority of holy Scripture, ancient Fathers, and Councils, it was vtterly vnlawfull for any man to marry his Brothers Widow, and that no such marriage could bee licenced or authorized, by the Popes Dispensation.* This being done, the King's intent was, they should procure the opinions of all the Vniversities throughout *Europe*, by whom if he found his former marriage condemned, then

1529.

then without farther expecting the approbation of the Sea of *Rome*, he was resolved to run the hazard of a second. To this the amity of the *French* seeming very conducive, the King had by his former liberality sought to oblige him. The Embassadours came to *Rome*, had audience, were promised a publique disputation, whereof they were held so long in expectation, that perceiving their stay there to bee to little purpose, they all returned into *England*, except CRANMER, who with the same instructions that hee had formerly beene sent to the Pope, was to go to the Emperour, whose Court was then in *Germany*. There this good & learned man, hitherto no friend to LUTHER, while he defends his owne booke and the King's Divorce against the most learned either of Protestants or Papists, is thought to have beene seasoned with the leaven of that doctrine, for which after he had beene twenty yeares Archbishop of *Canterbury*, he was most cruelly burned.

While CRANMER thus laboured abroad, the King at home deales with LANGEY the *French* Embassadour, by whose meanes (with the forcible Rhetoricke (saith one) of some *English* Angels) hee obtained of the Vniversities of *Paris* with the rest throughout *France*, *Pavia*, *Padua*, *Bononia*, and others, this Conclusion, That the Pope (who hath no power over the Positive Law of God) could not by his Dispensation ratifie a marriage contracted betweene a Brother and a brothers Widow, it being forbidden by the expresse words of Scripture.

The eight of December the King graced three noble and worthy men with new titles of honour. THOMAS BOLEN Viscount Rochfort the King's future Father in law, was created Earle of *Wiltshire*, ROBERT RATCLIF Viscount Fitz-Walter, of the noble Family of the FITZ-WALTERS, Earle of *Sussex*; in which honour his sonne THOMAS, his nephewes

THO-

Creation of
Earles.

1530.

THOMAS first, then HENRY brother to THOMAS, and now ROBERT the sonne of HENRY have succeeded him: And GEORGE Lord *Hastings* was made Earle of *Huntingdon*, who left it to his son FRANCIS Father of HENRY, who deceased without issue, and GEORGE Grandfather to HENRY the now Earle by FRANCIS, who died before his Father.

Anno Dom. 1530. Reg. 22.

1530.
The Bible
translated
into English.

WILLIAM TINDALL having translated the New Testament into *English*, and procured it to be printed at *Antwerp* had secretly dispersed many copies thereof throughout *England*. Whereat the Bishops and Clergy (especially those that were most addicted to the Doctrine of *Rome*) stormed exceedingly, saying that this Translation was full of errors, and that in the prefaces and else where it contained many things contrary to the Truth. The King being angry with the Pope, had long since determined to free himselfe from his vsurped power. And therefore admonished the murmuring Clergy to correct this booke, not to suppress it: for it was a most profitable worke, and very necessary for the discovery of the deceits of the Court of *Rome*, the tyranny whereof was become intolerable to all the Princes of Christendome. Whereupon he giveth order to the Bishops and some other learned men to set forth a new Translation, which his subiects might reade with safety and profit.

An Embassie
to the Pope.

The hope of prevailing with the Pope by the French King's meanes had drawne HENRY to send on a second Embassage to the Pope, the Earle of *Wiltshire*, Doctour STOKESLEY Elect of *London*, and

ED-

EDWARD LEE WOLSEY his Successor in Yorke. They found the Pope at *Bononia* with the Emperour, but had no other answer to their demands then, that his Holinesse when he came to *Rome*, would indeavour to do the King iustice. Till then he could do nothing.

Faire meanes not prevailing, the King runs another course. By publique Proclamation throughout the Kingdome he forbids all commerce betweene his subiects and the Bishop of *Rome*: commanding that no man should receive any thing from, or send any thing (especially money) vnto him, either by exchange, or any other meanes, calling him Tyrant, the Harpy of the World, the common incendiary, and deeming him vtterly vnworthy of that glorious title which he had vaingloriously vsurped, *Christs Vicar*. This in *September*.

But the wealth of the Clergy being very great, and considering how they had in the Raignes of his Predecessors strongly sided with the Pope, the King was somewhat iealous of them. To curbe them hee condemnes the whole Clergy throughout the Kingdome in a *Premunire*, for that without licence from his Majesty they had beene obedient to the authority of the Pope in acknowledging WOLSEY for his Legate. The Clergy of the Province of *Canterbury*, being assembled in Convocation, buy their pardon at a hundred thousand pounds, and in this Synode he is (with much ado) by the Clergy of both Provinces declared next vnder Christ *Supreme Head of the Church of England*, and all foraine power or authority whatsoever disclaimed. The Province of *Yorke* is moreover fined at eightene thousand eight hundred & forty pounds. So this one fault (if it may be so accompted it being certaine that WOLSEY was licenced to exercise his authority Legantine) cost the Clergy a hundred and eightene thousand, eight hundred and forty pounds.

Anno

1530.

All commerce with the Sea of Rome forbidden.

The Clergy fined.

The King declared Supreme Head of the Church.

1531.

Anno Dom. 1531. Reg. 23.

1531.

THe only publique memorable occurrents of this yeare were, that the Laity, for the most part as deepe in a *Premunire*, as the Clergy, were by Act of Parliament pardoned. In which assembly Sir THOMAS MORE Lord Chancellour, and other remarkable speakers related at large the Conclusions of the Vniversities concerning the vnlawfulnessse of the Kings marriage.

And yet perhaps the notorious villany of RICHARD ROSE Cooke to the Bishop of Rochester, might crave a place in this History, who with poysoned broth killed sixteene of the Bishops servants. The Bishop himselfe (who was especially aimed at) that day contrary to his accustomed diet forbearing broth, escaped. The poisoner according to a Law lately enacted, was throwne into a cauldron of boyling water. But the offence deserved tortures of a most exquisite straine.

Anno Dom. 1532. Reg. 24.

1532.
The death of
William
Warham
Archbishop
of Canter-
bury.
Cranmer
(though
much a-
gainst his
will) succee-
deth him.

ON the three and twentieth of *August* died WILLIAM WARHAM Archbishop of Canterbury, to whom THOMAS CRANMER at that time in *Germany* about the Kings affaires, was appointed Successor. He was not so ambitious as to aspire to such a dignity; and some reasons made him vnwilling to accept it being offred: He knew before he could be consecrated he must sweare obedience to the Pope, which with a safe conscience he could not.

He

1532.

He feared what would be the issue of this abrupt separation from the Sea of Rome. Hee knew the King's disposition to be violent, such sudaine changes to be full of danger, and the Court (although hee had not yet purchased the acquaintance of it) to be a meere schoole of fraud and dissembling. The Kings pleasure must necessarily be obeyed, and if he slipped neuer so little, enuy the mischievous attendant of great felicity would helpe him forward to a breake-neck. CRANMER also having long since lost his Wife whom he had married in his youth, had taken a liking to a certaine maide neipce to OSIANDER'S wife, whom he intended to make his second wife: yet hee knew that the Canon Law permitted not Priests to marry, and made them vncapable of holy Orders, who had beene twice married. These considerations made him linger in Germany six whole moneths after the dispatch of his businesse, hoping that his absence might afford meanes to some other to worke a way to the Archbishopricke. But the times were such, that they to whom desert might give greatest hopes of attaining it, did abhorre this still tottering and slippery dignity: and even they who were already advanced to the like, indeuoured to betake themselves to the safety of meaner fortune; As did Sir THOMAS MORE the Lord Chancellour, who by his continuall earnest petitions obtained leave of the King on the fiftene of May to resigne his place; and Sir THOMAS AWDLEY on the fourth of Iune was in his steed made Lord Keeper. CRANMER having privately married his wife at Norimberg, at length returned into England, where the Kings importunity prevailing beyond all scrupulous difficulties, CRANMER is (though much against his will) made Archbishop of Canterbury, the Pope also by his Bull confirming the Election. He refusing the Archbishopricke, because hee must

R

take

Sir Thomas
More re-
signes the
place of
Lord Chan-
cellour.

1532.

take an oath to the Pope, delivered the Bull to the King, protesting that hee would never accept of any Bishopricke in *England*, but from the King, who was Supreme Head of the Church of *England*; and that he would not take any oath that should any way derogate from the King's Authoritie. At length the subtle heads of the Lawiers found out a quirke whereby to salve all: He must first by a prævious Protestation except against this Oath (which was to be taken *pro formâ*) that it should not hereafter be any way preiudiciall to him. Thus ascended CRANMER to the Archiepiscopall See, where hee sate neere about twenty yeares, vntill Queene MARY the Daughter of repudiated CATHARINE not only thrust this most innocent, grave, learned man out of his Bishopricke, but with a barbarous cruelty condemned him to the fire, as hereafter in its place we shall declare.

*An enter-
view be-
twene the
Kings of
England
and France.*

For the Treatise of a more strict League betweene the two Kings of *England* and *France*, an interview is appointed betweene them. To this end on the eleventh of *October* the King with a mightie traine passed to *Calais*. The tenth day after going to *Boloigne* he was met halfe way by the *French* King & his Sons, and conducted to *Boloigne*, where the two Kings divided the Abbey betweene them. HENRY staid there foure dayes, and then brought FRANCIS (in whose company were the King of *Navarre*, some Dukes, and Cardinals, a great number of Noblemen, and of others at least twelve hundred) to *Calais*. At *Saint loquebert* the Duke of *Richmond* (who was not at *Boloigne* with the King his Father) received them. After much solemne entertainment, and the interchangeable favours from each King to the Princes of each others company, from HENRY to the King of *Navarre* (or as the *French* write, to MONTMORENCY) and CHABOT the Admirall by the Order of the

the *Garter*; From FRANCIS to the Dukes of *Norfolke* and *Suffolke* by that of Saint MICHAEL, these great Monarchs parted.

1532.

Ielousie of the Emperours still increasing power had now vnited these Princes, and their naturall dispositions wonderfull agreeable had made them alwayes prone to a mutuall love, which by this interview tooke such deepe root, that even in their owne opinions they rested assured of each other. And indeed had they beene private persons, their friendship in all likelihood had continued inviolable. But Princes are not so much to be swayed by their owne Affections, as the consideration of the publique Vtilitie. The effect of this interview was an agreement to repressse the Turke about that time wasting *Hungary*, to which end they should assemble together by their ioint forces an Army of fourescore thousand men, whereof there should be ten thousand horse with artillery requisite for the said Campe: A specious pretext: For they both knew, that the *Turke* had already retreated. But in private they treated of other matters. They had both many causes of discontent. FRANCIS not without cause was displeased with the Pope, and HENRY thinking it best to strike while the iron was hot, indeuoured an vtter alienation betweene them. HENRY complains first of the wrong the Court of *Rome* did him touching the matter of his Divorce, in the suite whereof full six yeares were now spent: and yet at length after all their deceits & mockeries, they seeke to force him, either to goe in person to *Rome*, or in a matter of so great importance to send Deputies, who should in the Kings behalfe follow the suite. An insolent proceeding, and iniury without example which did concerne the *French* and all other Princes of Christendome. For in like cases hapning among Soveraigne Princes, especially touching

1532.

ching the conscience so neere it, was the vsuall custome of other Popes to send Iudges to the place, it being reasonable that the Persons should speake personally, and not by their Attorneyes, and very vnreasonable, that a Soueraigne Prince leaving the rule and government of his Estates should go and plead his cause at *Rome*. Morcover hee did complaine of the intolerable exactions of the Church of *Rome* over the Clergy and people of *England*; whereby the yoke, before too heavy, was now become insupportable: neither did he doubt, but the same courses were taken in *France*, *Germany* had begun the way of freedome to the rest of Christendome: why should not other Princes follow their example? To conclude, hee did instantly require, that they two should send their Embassadours iointly together to the Pope to summon him to appeare at the next generall Councell, there to answer his extortions, and by the authority and iudgement of the Councell to force him to a reformation: affirming, that there was no Nation in Christendome, which did not desire, that the insolencies of the *Romanists* should be repressed. To this the *French* answered, that hee acknowledged these things to be true, but it was not in his power to yeild to the Kings request, yet for the brotherly love which hee did beare vnto him, and the chari able regard of his owne Country, he professed himselfe ready to vndergo all difficulties. Hee wanted not sufficient iniuries whereof to complaine, considering that he having so well deserved of the Apostolique See, but more especially of this Pope, yet he certainly found, that CLEMENT, all this notwithstanding, was not well affected towards him. CLEMENT had very lately suffered his reputation to be violated in his presence, and by the Bishop of *Verulo* had secretly endeavoured to alienate the *Suisses* his allies from him. *France*
groa.

1532.

groaned vnder the burthen of the new and vndutifull exactions of the Popes Officers, by meanes whereof all the treasure was carried out of the Kingdome, to the preiudice of his subiects (the Clergy especially) who grew poore, the Churches were vnrepaired, and the poore neither clothed nor fed: and if he himselfe levied any great summe of money, the tributes are longer comming in then vsually they were wont. But he thought it best, before they proceeded to that harsh course, to vse some milder meanes, whereto there was a faire occasion offred, the Pope having by the Cardinall of *Grandmont* made him a promise of an interview at *Nice* or *Avignon*: where if hee could not obtaine reason of him in the behalfe of both, hee would indeavour to prevaile by force where he could not by iust intreaties: In the meane time he desired him to attend the issue of their parley.

BUT FRANCIS concealed the true cause of this intended interview, for feare least our HENRY not approving it, should seeke to dissuade him from it. The *French* was implacable towards the Emperour, against whom to strengthen himselfe, hee meanes to win the Pope by the marriage of his younger Sonne HENRY Duke of *Orleans* (who after raigned) with CATHARINE de MEDICES Duchesse of *Urbino* the Popes Niece. The Pope could not at first believe this potent Prince intended him so much honour: but perceiving the *French* to be reall, he most eagerly farthered it, appointing time and place for the consummation of it, which was after done at *Marseilles* by CLEMENT himselfe in the presence of the *French* King.

Catharina
de Medices
married to
the Duke of
Orleans.

Anno

1533.

Anno Dom. 1533. Reg. 25.

1533.
The King
marrieth
Anne Bolen.

THe King's loue brooked no delayes. Wherefore on the five and twentieth of *January*, privately and in the presence of very few, he marrieth the Ladie ANNE BOLEN.

Shortly after by Act of Parliament the marriage of the King and the Lady CATHARINE was declared void and incestuous, and a Law enacted, wherein all Appeales to *Rome* were forbidden, and that none should stile CATHARINE other then Princessse of *Wales*, and Widow or Dowager of Prince ARTHUR. By vertue and authority of the same Law, the Archbishop of *Canterbury* accompanied with some other Bishops, comming to *Dunstable* six miles from *Amptbill*, where CATHARINE then resided, caused her to be cited before Him next vnder the King chiefe Iudge in all Ecclesiasticall causes within the Province of *Canterbury*, to shew what reasons could be alleaged why the marriage not lawfully contracted betweene the King and her should not be disannulled, and pronounced impious, incestuous, and consequently void. To these things by one of her servants she answered; that it beseemed not the Archbishop to thrust his sickle into anothers harvest: this Cause did yet depend vndecided before the Pope CHRIST'S Vicar on earth, whose Decree she would obcy, and other Iudge would shee acknowledge none. Being called fifteene dayes together and not appearing, Shee is pronounced *Contumax*, and for her contumacie separated from the Kings bed and company. Wherevpon the Lady ANNE proclaimed Queenethroughout the Kingdome, on Easter eve shewed her selfe publicuely as Quene: and was

was at Whitsonside crowned with as great pompe and solemnitie as ever was Queene. The particulars I will let passe, excepting that propheticall Disticke vpon one of the triumphant Arches purposely erected in London where shee was to passe:

1533.

*Regina ANNA, paris Regis de sanguine Natam,
Et paries populis aurea secla tuis.*

In English,

ANNE, thou a daughter bearest to our King,
And to thy people golden dayes shalt bring.

Wafers also with the same impression were throwne about saith STOW. But I rather belceve, that this Disticke was made after the Queenes deliverie. Whensoever it were, hee that truely considers the felicitie of the foure and fortie yeares raigne of this Queenes Daughter, will thinke this Oracle could not proceed from any but a Delphian APOLLO. For the Queene at the time of her Coronation was great with childe, (whereof the seventh of September shee was delivered at Greenwich) which was that ever famous Queene ELIZABETH, who after the death of her Brother and Sister so gloriously ruled this Kingdome.

*The birth of
Queene Eli-
zabeth.*

The Pope was certified of all these passages; that his authoritie in England was abrogated, that the late Queene CATHARINE was put away, that ANNE BOLEN as Queene was taken to the Kings bed, that the King stiled himselfe Supreme Head of the Church of England, that the Archbishop of Canterbury executed all those offices which formerly the Pope only did, and that not as the Popes Legate, but as Primate of England, who vnder the King claimed chiefe authority in Ecclesiastical

1533.

fticall affaires throughout his whole Province. Where-
with being netled, hee seemed to breath nothing but
threats and revenge. But knowing himselfe to have
beene the motive of it, and doubtfull of the event, he
was easily perswaded by the *French King*, as yet not to
proceed by excommunication against *HENRY*, vn-
till he had made triall of some milder course. Where-
vpon *FRANCIS* by *BELLAY* Bishop of *Paris* en-
treats *HENRY* not to withdraw himselfe wholly
from the obedience of *Rome*, for as much as it was a
matter of great danger: Hee would therefore advise
him once more by Embassadours to *Rome*, to signifie
that he was not vtterly averse from a reconciliation:
which if hee did, hee made no doubt but all things
would succeed to his minde. *HENRY* was certaine
of enioying his Love, and let the Pope decree what
he list, was resolved to keepe her. Hee had beene for-
merly abused by the Court of *Rome*, and was loath
to make farther triall of their dilatory proceedings.
Yet had *BELLAY* prevailed so farre with him,
that Hee would be content once more to submit
himselfe to the Church of *Rome*, if hee could bee as-
sured of the Popes intention to do him equity. The
Bishop conceiving some hopes of a peace (although
it were in the winter time) goes himselfe to *Rome*,
gives the Pope an account of his actions, and certifies
him that the matter was not yet desperate. Where-
vpon a day is appointed by which a Post returning
from the King was to give notice of an intended
Embassie. But the Consistory gave so short a time
to have an answer, that the Post came short two
dayes at his returne. The terme expired, they pro-
ceed hastily to the confirmation of their Censures
notwithstanding the Bishops instance to obtaine
six dayes more, for as much as contrary windes
or some other chance might hinder the messenger;
and

1535.

4521

and six dayes would be no great matter, considering the King had wauered six whole yeares before hee fell: The more moderate thought the Bishop demanded but reason; but the preposterous haste of the greater sort preuailed. Two dayes were scarce past after the prefixed time, but the Post arriuing with ample authority, and instructions from *England*, did greatly amaze those hasty Cardinalls, who afterwards would faine, but could not finde any meanes to mend what they had so rashly marred. For the matter (to please the Emperor) was so huddled vp, as that which could not ritely bee finished in three Consistories, was done in one. So the King and the whole Realme was interdicted, the *Bull* whereof (the Messengers not daring to come neerer) was brought to *Dunkirk*.

The report hereof comming to the King, hee laies all the blame on the Lady CATHARINE. Whereupon the Duke of *Suffolke* was sent to lessen her Household: They who might be any way suspected to haue been imploied by her in this businesse, are turned away, the rest are commanded to take their oathes to serue her as *Princesse of Wales*, not as *Queene of England*. They that refuse are cashiered, and they that are content to sweare, are by her cast off; so that for a time shee had few or no Attendants.

In the meane time, on the three and twentieth of *June* died MARY *Queene of France* the Kings Sister, and was buried in the Abbey of Saint *Edmundsbury*.

Mary *Queen of France* dieth.

S

Anno

1534.

Anno Dom. 1534. Reg. 26.

ABout this time was discovered the grand imposture of ELIZABETH BARTON, which brought her to a deserued end. Shee had formerly beene sicke of a strange disease, which not only afflicted her inwardly, but as often as her fit tooke her, so wonderfully distorted her mouth and other parts of her body, that most were of opinion, it could not proceed from any naturall cause. But Custome growing to a second Nature, the continuance of the Disease had taught her to distort her body after her recouery, in the same manner as when she was sicke. Hoping to make a profit of this her counterfeit Convulsion, she imparted the secret to the Curate of the Parish: by whose deuce after long deliberation betweene them, it was agreed, that she should often faine her selfe to be in an ecstasie: and whereas shee was wont when the fit seized her, to ly still without motion, as if she had been dead, shee should now sometimes vtter some godly sentences, inveigh against the wickednesse of the times, but especially against Heretiques and broachers of new Opinions; and should relate strange visions revealed by God to her in the time of her ecstasie. By these jugling trickes, not only among the Vulgar (who termed the *holy Maid of Kent*) but among the wiser sort, such as were Archbishop WARHAM, Bishop FISHER, and others, her sanctity was held in admiration. The Imposture taking so generally, her boldnesse increased. Shee prefixeth a day whereon she shall be restored to perfect health, and the meanes of her recouery must be procured

procured forsooth by a pilgrimage to some certaine Image of our Lady. The day came, and shee beeing brought to the place, by the like couzenage deceiued a great number of people, whom the expectation of the miracle had drawne thither: and at last, as if she had iust then shaken off her disease, shee appeares whole and straight vnto them all; saying, That by especiall command from God shee must become a Nunne, and that one Doctor BOCKING a Monke of *Canterbury* there present, was ordained to bee her Confessor, which office hee willingly vnderooke: vnder pretext whereof this Nunne liuing at *Canterbury*, BOCKING often resorted to her, not without suspition of dishonesty.

The intended Divorce from CATHARINE, and marriage with ANNE BOLEN, had much appalled most part of the Clergy: for then a necessity was imposed on the King, of a divorce from the Papall Sea, in which the Church and all Ecclesiasticall persons were likely to suffer. The apprehension whereof wrought so with BOCKING, that making others conscious of the intent, hee perswaded ELIZABETH BARTON by denuntiation of Gods revealed judgements to deterre the King from his purposed change. Shee according as shee was instructed, proclaimes it abroad, That the King aduenturing to marry another, CATHARINE surviving, should, if in the meane time hee died not some infamous death, within one moneth after be deprived of his Kingdome. The King heares of it, and causeth the Impostrix to be apprehended, who vpon examination discovered the rest of the conspirators, who were all committed to prison vntill the next Parliament should determine of them. ELIZ. BARTON, BOCKING, MASTERS, (the afore mentioned Curate of the Parish) DEERING, and RISBEY,

1534.

Monkes, with GOLD a Priest, are by the Parliament adiudged to dy. The Bishop of Rochester, and ADESON his Chaplaine, one ABEL a Priest, LAVRENCE the Archdeacon of Canterbury his Register, and THOMAS GOLD Gentleman, for hauing heard many things, whereby they might guesse at the intents of the Conspirators, and not acquainting the Magistrate with them, are as accessory condemned in a *Premunire*, (confiscation of their goods, and perpetuall imprisonment.) ELIZABETH BARTON and her Companions, hauing each of them after a Sermon at *Pauls Crosse*, publiquely confessed the Imposture, are on the twentieth of *Aprill* hanged, and their heads set over the gates of the City.

No Canons
to be consti-
tuted with-
out the Kings
assent.

The King to
collate Bi-
shopricks.

By the same Parliament, the authority of the Convocation to make Canonickall Constitutions, vnlesse the King giue this Royall assent, is abrogated.

It is also enacted, That the Collocation of all Bishopricks, the Seas being vacant, should henceforth be at the Kings dispose, and that no man should be chosen by the Chapter, or consecrated by the Archbishop, but he on whom the King by his *Congé D'eslire* or other his Letters had conferred that Dignity.

The Arch-
bishop of
Canterbury
hath Papall
authority vn-
der the King.

And wheras many complained, that now all commerce with *Rome* was forbidden, all meanes were taken away of mitigating the rigour of the Ecclesiasticall Lawes of Dispensation; Papall authority is granted to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the King reserving to himselfe the power of dispensing in causes of greater moment. And that all Appeals formerly wont to be made from the Archbishop to the Pope, should now bee from the Archbishop to the King, who by Delegates should determine all such suites and controversies.

Furthermore, the Kings marriage with the Lady CATHARINE is againe pronounced incestuous, the

the Succession to the Crowne established on the Kings Issue begotten on Queene ANNE. And all aboute the age of sixteen yeares throughout the Kingdome, are to be bound by oath, to the obseruance of this Law: whosoever refused to take this oath, should suffer losse of all their goods, and perpetuall imprisonment.

Throughout all the Realme there were found but two, who durst refractorily oppose this Law, *viz.* FISHER Bishop of Rochester, and Sir THOMAS MOORE the late Lord Chancellor; men who were indeed very learned, but most obstinate stickers in the behalfe of the Church of Rome: who being not to be drawne by any persuations, to be conformable to the Law, were committed to prison, from whence after a yeares durance they were not freed but by the losse of their liues.

But the King fearing that it might be thought, That hee tooke these courses rather out of a contempt of Religion, than in regard of the tyrannie of the Court of Rome; to free himselfe from all suspition either of favouring LUTHER, or any authors of new Opinions, began to persecute that sort of men whom the Vulgar called Heretiques, and condemned to the cruelty of that mercilesse Element Fire, not only certaine Dutch Anabaptists, but many Professors of the Truth: and amongst others, that learned and godly young man IOHN FRITH, who with one HEWET and others, on the two and twentieth of July constantly endured the torments of their martyrdom.

The five and twentieth of September died CLEMENT the Seuenth, Pope; in whose place succeeded ALEXANDER FARNESE by the name of PAVLVS the Third, who to begin his time with some memorable Act, hauing called a Consistory, pronounced HENRY to be fallen from the Title and Dig-

1534.

Fisher and
More imprisoned.

Persecution.

Pope Clement dieth.

1534.

Dignity of a King, and to be deposed, re-iterating withall the thunder of Excommunication, with which bug-beare his predecessor CLEMENT had sought to affright him. But this peradventure happened in the insuing yeare, after the death of FISHER and MORE.

A Parliament is againe called in November, wherein (according to the Decree of the late Synod) the King was declared *Supreme Head of the Church of England*, and the punishment all crimes which formerly pertained to the Ecclesiasticall Courts, is made proper to him. So the Kingdome is vindicated from the vsurpation of the Pope, who before shared in it, and the King now first began to raigne entirely.

Also all Annates or first Fruits formerly paid to the Pope, are granted to the King.

And *Wales* the seat of the remainder of the true ancient Britans, hitherto differing from vs (compounded of Normans and Saxons) as well in the forme of their gouernment, as in Language, is by the authority of this Parliament (to the great good of both, but especially that Nation) vnited and incorporated to England. EDWARD the First was the first who subdued this Countrey, yet could hee not preuaile over their mindes, whome the desire of recouering their lost liberty, animated to many rebellions. By reason whereof, and our suspicions, being for two hundred yeares oppressed either with the miseries of seruitude or war, they neuer tasted the sweet fruits of a true and solid peace. But HENRY the Seuenth by bloud (in regard of his Father) and birth a Welchman, comming to the Crowne, (as if they had recouered their liberty, whereto they so long aspired) they obeyed him as their lawfull Prince. So the English being

First fruits
granted to
the King.
Wales uni-
ted to Eng-
land.

being freed of their former jealousies permitted them to partake of their Priuiledges, since common to both Nations, the good whereof equally redounded to both. I could wish the like Vnion with *Scotland*: That as wee all liue in one Island, professing one Faith, and speaking for the most part one Language, vnder the gouernment of one and the same Prince; so we may become one Nation, all equally acknowledging our selues *Britans*, and so recouer our true Countrey *Britaine*, lost as it were so many hundreds of yeares, by our divisions of it into *England*, *Scotland*, and *Wales*.

Anno Dom. 1535. Reg. 27.

THe Coronation of the new Queene, and other passages of entertainment, had exhausted the Treasury. The *Pope* and the Empe-
rour were both enemies to HENRY, watchfully attending all opportunities to do him mischief. Neither in regard that so many sided with the *Pope*, were all things safe at home. The King was therefore forced to a course seemingly rash, and full of dangerous consequences, but very necessary for the time. Hee resolves to demolish all the Monasteries throughout *England*. Hee is content the Nobility should share with him in the spoile, so enriching and strengthening himselfe by their necessary revolt from the Popish faction. To this end, they that were thought more especially in maintaining the Popes authority to withstand the Kings proceedings, were condemned of high Treason: and they that refused to acknowledge the King vnder CHRIST, *Supreme Head of the Church of England*,
are

1535.

1535.

*The King
begins to sub-
vert religi-
ous houses.*

1535.

*Certaine Pri-
ors & Monks
executed.*

are hanged. For this cause on the third of May were executed JOHN HOUGHTON Prior of the Charterhouse in London, AUGUSTINE WEBSTER Prior of Bervaley, and THOMAS LAWRENCE Prior of Exham, and with them RICHARD REIGNALDS a Monke and Doctor of Divinity, and JOHN HALES Vicar of Thistlehurst.

*The Bishop
Rochester
beheaded.*

On the eighteenth of June, EXMEW, MIDDLEMORE, and NVDIGATE, all Charterhouse Monkes, suffered for the same cause. And foure dayes after, JOHN FISHER Bishop of Rochester, a man much revered by the People for his holy life and great learning, was publicuely beheaded, and his head set over London bridge. Our Histories hardly afford a president of the execution of such a man. But the Pope was the occasion of his death, who to ease the burthen of his now a yeares imprisonment, by the addition of a new title, had on the one and twentieth of May created him Cardinall. The newes whereof hastened him to a scaffold.

*Made Car-
dinall unsea-
sonably.*

*Sir Thomas
Moore be-
headed.*

The sixth of July, Sir THOMAS MORE for the same stiffness in opinion with Bishop FISHER, suffered the like death. This was that MORE so famous for his *Eutopia*, and many other Workes both in *English* and *Latin*. As for his conversation, the most censorious fault him in nothing, but his too too jesting (I will not say scoffing) wit, to which he gaue more liberty, then did beseeme the grauity of his person, not tempering himselfe in the midst of his calamity, no not at the very instant of death. After his condemnation hee denied to giue any thing to the Barber that trimmed him, affirming, *That bead about which he had bestowed his paines, was the Kings:*

Kings: if he could prove it to be his that did beare it, hee would well reward him. To his Keeper demanding his upper garment as his fee, hee gaue his Hat. Going vp the scaffold, he desired him that went before him, to lend him his band to helpe him up, as for comming downe he tooke no care. Laying his head vpon the block, hee put aside his beard (which was then very long) saying, The Executioner was to cut off his head, not his beard.

The executions of so many men caused the Queene to be much maligned, as if they had beene done by her procurement, at least the Papists would haue it thought so, knowing that it stood her vpon, and that indeed shee endeavoured, that the authority of the Pope of Rome should not againe take footing in England. They desired nothing more than the downefall of this vertuous Lady, which shortly after happening, they triumphed in the overthrow of Innocence.

In the meane time they who vndertooke the subversion of the Monasteries, invented an Engine to batter them more forcibly, then the former course of torture and punishment. They send abroad subtle headed fellowes, who warranted by the Kings authority, should throughout England search into the liues and manners of religious persons. It would amaze one to consider what villanies were discovered among them by the meanes of CROMWELL and others. Few were found so guiltlesse, as to dare withstand their proceedings: and the licentiousnesse of the rest divulged, made them all so odious to the people, that neuer any exploit so full of hazard and danger was more easily atchieued, then was the subversion of our English Monasteries.

This Anno

1535.

*Religious
Houses vi-
sited.*

1536.

The death of
Queene Catharine.

Queene
Anne, the
Viscount
Rochford
and others
committed.

Anno Dom. 1536. Reg. 28.

THis yeare began with the end of the late Queene CATHARINE, whom extremity of griefe cast into a disease, whereof on the eighth of *January* she deceased.

Queene ANNE now enjoyed the King without a Rivall, whose death notwithstanding not improbably happened too soone for her. For the King vpon May day at *Greenwich* beholding the Viscount Rochford the Queenes brother, HENRY NORRIS, and others, running a tilt, arising suddenly, and to the wonder of all men departing thence to *London*, caused the Viscount Rochford, NORRIS, the Queene herselfe, and some others, to be apprehended and committed. The Queene being guarded to the Tower by the Duke of *Norfolke*, AVDLEY Lord Keeper, CROMWELL Secretary of Estate, and KINGSTON Lieutenant of the Tower, at the very entrance vpon her knees with dire imprecations disavowed the crime (whatsoever it were) wherewith shee was charged, beseeching God so to regard her as the iustnesse of her cause required.

On the fifteenth of *May* in the hall of the Tower she was arraigned, the Duke of *Norfolke* sitting high Steward, to whom were adioined twenty six other Peeres (and among them the Queenes Father) by whom she was to be tried. The Accusers hauing giuen in their evidence, and the Witnesses produced, she sitting in a chaire (whether in regard of any infirmity, or out of honour permitted to the Wife of their Soueraigne) hauing an excellent quicke wit, and being a ready speaker, did so answer to all obiections, that had the Peeres giuen in their verdict according to

1536.

to the expectation of the assembly, shee had beene acquitted. But they (among whom the Duke of *Suffolke* the Kings brother in Law was chiefe, one wholly applying himselfe to the Kings humor) pronounce Her guilty. Whereupon the Duke of *Norfolke* bound to proceed according to the verdict of the Peeres, condemned Her to death, either by being burned in the Greene in the Tower, or beheaded, as his Maiesty in his pleasure should thinke fit. Her brother G E O R G E Viscont *Rochford* was likewise the same day condemned, and shortly after, H E N R Y N O R R I S, W I L L I A M B R I E R T O N, and F R A N C I S W E S T O N Gentlemen of the Kings Priuy Chamber, and M A R K E S M E T O N a Musitian, either as Partakers or accessory, were to run the same fortune. The King greatly favoured N O R R I S, and is reported to be much grieved, that he was to dy with the rest. Whereupon he offered pardon to him, conditionally that he would confesse that whereof hee was accused. But hee answered resolutely, and as it became the progenitor of so many valiant Heroes, *That in his conscience he thought her guiltlesse of the obiected crime, but whether she were or no, he could not accuse her of any thing: and that he had rather vndergo a thousand deaths, then betray the Innocent.* Vpon relation whereof the King cryed out, *Hang him vp then, Hang him vp then.* Which notwithstanding was not accordingly executed: For on the thirteenth of May, two dayes after his condemnation, all of them, viz. the Viscont *Rochford*, N O R R I S, B R I E R T O N, and S M E T O N, were beheaded at Tower hill. N O R R I S left a sonne called also H E N R Y, whom Queene E L I Z A B E T H in contemplation of his Fathers deserts created Baron of *Ricot*. This Lord N O R R I S

*The Queene
condemned,*
*with her
Brother,*
and Norris.

1536.

Her execution.

was father to those great Captaines WILLIAM, JOHN, THOMAS, and EDWARD, in our dayes so famous throughout Christendome, for their braue exploits in England, France, Irland, and the Netherlands.

On the nineteenth of May the Queene was brought to the place of execution in the greene within the Tower, some of the Nobility and Companies of the City being admitted, rather to be witnesses, than spectators of her death. To whom the Queene hauing ascended the scaffold, spake in this manner:

Friends and good Chrsitian people, I am here in your presence to suffer death, whereto I acknowledge my selfe adiudged by the Lawes; how iustly I will not say, for I intend not an accusation of any one. I beseech the Almighty to preserue his Maiesty long to raigne ouer you: a more gentle or milde Prince neuer swayed Scepter: his bounty and clemency towards me I am sure hath beene especiall. If any one intend an inquisitiue survey of my actions, I intreat him to iudge favourably of me, and not rashly to admit of any hard censorious conceit. And so I bid the world farewell, beseeching you to commend mee in your Prayers to God. To thee O Lord do I commend my Soule.

Then kneeling downe, she incessantly repeated these words, CHRIST haue mercy on my soule, Lord IESVS recerue my soule; vntill the Executioner of
Calais

1536.

Calais at one blow smote off her head with a sword. Had any one three yeares before (at what time the King so hot in the pursuit of his loue, preferred the enioying of this Lady beyond his Friends, his Estate, his Health, Safeguard, and his onely Daughter) prophetically foretold the vnhappy fate of this Princeesse, he should haue beene beleeued with CASSANDRA. But much more incredible may all wise men thinke the vnheard of crime for which shee was condemned: *viz.* That fearing least her Daughter the Lady ELIZABETH borne while CATHARINE survived, should bee accompted illegitimate, in hope of other (especially male) Issue, whereof shee despaired by the King, now neere fifty yeares old, shee had lasciviously vsed the company of certaine young Courtiers: nay not therewith content, had committed incest with her owne Brother. A strange ingratitude in one raised from so low degree, euen to the height of honour. I will not derogate from the Authority of publique Records: But an Act of Parliament against her shall not worke on my beliefe. Surely it carried so little shew of probability with foraine Princes, that they alwaies deemed it an act of inhumane cruelty. Especially the Estates of *Germany* Confederates for the defence of the Reformed Religion; who having often treated with FOX Bishop of *Hereford*, and other Embassadours, had decreed to make HENRY Head of their League, and had designed an Embassy by JOHN STURMIVS, who should haue brought with him into *England* those excellent Divines PHILIP MELANCTHON and MARTIN BUCER, with one GEORGE DRACO, who should endeavour that and the Reformation of our Church. But having heard of the lamentable

1536.

Lady Elizabeth disinherited.

ble and vnworthy (as they iudged it) end of the Queene, loathing the King for his inconstancy and cruelty, they cast off all farther thought of that matter. I will not presume to discusse the truth of their opinion: But freely to speake what I my selfe thinke; There are two reasons which sway much with mee in the behalfe of the Queene. That her Daughter the Lady ELIZABETH was seated in the Royall Throne, where shee for so many yeares ruled so happily and triumphantly. What shall we thinke, but that the Divine Goodnesse was pleased to recompence the ^{un}just calamity of the Mother, in the glorious prosperity of the Daughter? And then consider but the Kings precipitated Nuptialls the very next day after the death of his former Wife, yet scarce interred, and with whose warme bloud his imbrued hands yet reaked: consider this, I say, and you shall easily be perswaded with mee, that the insatiable Prince glutted with the satiety of one, and out of the desire of variety seeking to enioy another, did more willingly giue eare to the treacherous calumnies of the malicious Popelings, than either befitted an vpright Iudge, or a louing husband. For it seemeth wonderfull strange to mee, that either the fault of the one, or the pleasing conditions and faire language of the other Wife, should so far possesse the King, as that hee should procure his daughter ELIZABETH to be by Act of Parliament declared illegitimate, the matrimony contracted with both the former Queenes CATHARINE and ANNE to be pronounced invalid, and the Crowne to be perpetually established on the posterity of the third wife, or if the King had no Issue by her, that then it should bee lawfull for him by Will and Testament, to transfer it on whome hee pleased.

pleased. Parliaments were not then so rigid, but that they could flatter the Prince, and condescend to his demands, though vniust, even in cases which most neerely concerned the publique Weale. But servile *Feare* is oft times more ready then *Loue*, which slowly moves by apprehension of *Good*, as the other is quickly forced by the apprehension of *Danger*.

On the twentieth of *May* the King married IANE SEIMOUR Daughter of Sir IOHN SEIMOUR, who on the nine and twentieth of *May*, being Whitsonday, clad in royall habiliments, was openly shewed as Queene. So that the Court of *England* was now like a Stage, whereon are represented the vicissitudes of ever various Fortune. For within one and the same moneth it saw Queene ANNE flourishing, accused, condemned, executed, and another assumed into her place both of bed and honour. The first of *May* (it seemeth) shee was informed against, the second imprisoned, the fifteenth condemned, the seventeenth deprived of her Brother and Friends who suffered in her cause, and the nineteenth executed. On the twentieth the King married IANE SEIMOUR, who on the nine and twentieth was publicquely shewed as Queene.

The death of this innocent Lady God seemed to revenge in the immature end of the Duke of *Richmond* the Kings only (but naturall) Sonne, a Prince of excellent forme and endowments, who deceased the two and twentieth of *Iuly*, for whom the King a long time after mourned.

In the meane time on the nineteenth of *Iuly* IOHN BOURCHIER Lord *Fitz-waren*, was created Earle of *Bathe*, whose successours in that Honour were his Sonne IOHN, who begat IOHN deceased before his Father, whose Sonne WILLIAM is now Earle of *Bathe*. At what time also THOMAS CROMWELL a poore

1536.

The King
marrieth
Iane Sci-
mour.

Death of the
Duke of So-
merfet the
Kings natu-
rall Sonne.

Bourchier
Earle of
Bathe.

1536.
Cromwells
Honor &
Dignity.

The begin-
ning of Re-
formation.

poore Smiths Sonne, but of a dexterous wit, whose first rising was in the Family of Cardinall WOLSEY, in whose service by him faithfully performed, he grew famous, was made Lord CROMWELL, many dignities being also conferred on him, to the increase of his estate and honour. For first he was Master of the Rolls, and principall Secretary of Estate: then Sir THOMAS BOLEN Earle of *Wiltshire* resigning, he was made Lord Privy Seale, and after that dignified with the vnheard of Title, of *The Kings Vicar generall in affaires Ecclesiasticall*. For the authority of the Pope being abrogated, many busineses dayly happened, which could not bee dispatched without the Kings consent; who not able to vndergo the burthen alone, conferred this authority granted him by Act of Parliament on CROMWELL, not for that he thought a Lay man fitter for this dignity than a Clergy man; but because hee had determined vnder colour and pretence thereof, to put in execution some designes, wherein the Clergy in all probability would haue moved very slowly, and against the haire. Hee was therefore President in the Synod this yeare. Certainly a deformed spectacle, to see an vnlearned Lay man President over an assembly of sacred Prelates, and such as for their learning *England* had in no preceding ages knowne the like. For indeed HENRY is for that much to be commended, who would not easily advance any one to place of government in the Church, but whome his learning should make worthy. By the authority of this Synod a booke was set forth, wherein (many points of Doctrine being proposed to be by the Curates expounded to their Parishioners) mention was made of onely theee Sacraments, *Baptisme*, the *Eucharist*, and *Penance*: some holy dayes also were abrogated, and other things pertaining to Religion and Ecclesiasticall discipline some-

somewhat changed, wherewith many were offended, who preferred *prescript Errors* before the Truth.

The same time, the Parliament assembled the fourth of *January*, permitted all Monasteries, the revenues whereof exceeded not two hundred pounds a yeare, to the Kings disposall; who causing them to be suppressed (to the number of three hundred seventy and six) entred vpon their lands, amounting to thirty two thousand pounds a yeare, and selling their goods even at very low rates, (most men accounting it sacrilegious, to set to sale the goods of the Church) raised aboue an hundred thousand pounds. These things of themselves were distastfull to the vulgar sort. Each one did as it were claime a share in the goods of the Church: for many who being neither Monkes, nor relied to Religious persons, did receive no profit of Ecclesiasticall goods, did notwithstanding conceiue, that it might herafter come to passe, that either their children, freinds, or kinred, might obtaine the places yet supplied by others, whereas of these goods once confiscated, they could not hope that any commodity should redound vnto them. But the commiseration of so many people, to the number of at least ten thousand, who were without any warning giuen, thrust out of doores, and committed to the mercy of the world, was a more forcible cause of generall distaste. Which notwithstanding of it selfe sufficient; was augmented by the malice of ill disposed and seditious persons, who in their assemblies exaggerated these proceedings as the beginnings of greater evils; that this was but a triall of their patience, as yet the shrubs and underwoods were but touched, but without speedy remedy the end would bee with the fall of the lofty oakes. While these generall discontents thus vented

1536.

The subversion of religious houses of lesse note.

1536.

Commotion
in Lincolne-
shire.

themselves in private, CROMWELL in September sent forth certaine Injunctions to the Clergy, by vertue whereof each Curate was to expound to his parishioners the *Apostles Creed*, the *Lords Prayer*, the *Aue Maria*, and the *Ten Commandements*, and earnestly to endeavour that they might learne them in the *English Tongue*. This drave these Male-contents into such extremes, that the midwifry of any occasion served to produce the prodigious issues of their madnesse. For in *Lincolneshire* the Commons being assembled about the beginning of *October*, concerning Subsidies to be paid to the King; as if the spirit of fury had generally animated them, they suddenly to the number of twenty thousand tooke armes, forcing certaine Lords and Gentlemen to be their leaders, and to sweare to such Articles as they should propound: such as refused were either imprisoned or put to death, as was a certaine Priest Chancellor to the Bishop of *Lincoln*. The King being certified of this Commotion, sent against the Rebels with great Forces the Duke of *Suffolke*, and the Earles of *Shrewsbury* and *Kent*, either to appease or suppress them. The rumour of an Army marching against them, so quailed their courages, that they sent to excuse themselves vnto the King, pretending,

That their endeavours tended to no other than the safety of his Maiesly, and good of the Realme: That hee hauing followed the advice of bad Counsellors, had lately beyond the example of any of his Ancestors, changed many things in the estate of Commonwealth and Church: That having dispossessed the religious

1536.

religious Inhabitants, he had demolished many Monasteries, where the poore had daily reliefe, and God was wont to be deuoutly worshipped by godly men: That the Feasts of Saints instituted many yeares since, were profaned by his command: That new Tenets which the Catholique Church did abhor, were every where preached and obtruded to the people: That now in each aged person was to be seene the Embleme of Ignorance, who having one foot in the grave, were faine to betake them to their ABC Bookes, that they might learne new kinde of Prayers neuer before used by any Christians: That many vniust and pernicious Lawes had lately beene enacted, and great Subsidies exacted both of the Clergy and Laity even in the time of Peace, which were not wont to be demanded but for the maintenance of Wars: That the Commons in generall did distaste these things; and the rather, for that they conceived them to be but trialls of their patience, and the beginnings of more insupportable euills. Wherefore they humbly beseeched his Maiesty, whom they could not safely petition vnarmed, that the Authours of these pernicious counsailes might sit no longer at the sterne, but that others who should faithfully

V 2 endea-

1536.

endeavour the amendment of the aforesaid evils, might supply their places, and that it might not be any way preiudiciall to them, that they had taken Armes, which even with the losse of their deereſt bloud they were ready to imploy for his Maieſties ſafety, and the defence of the Realme.

The King had a Spirit beſitting his greatneſſe, and perceiving them to ſhrinke, could not diſſemble the rage he had conceived at the preſumption of this rationally rout, who durſt capitulate with their Sovereigne, and ſeeke to curbe the vnlimited power of Kings. Wherefore he roughly commands them, that without delay one hundred of their company, ſuch as by his appointment ſhould be made choice of, ſhould be deliuered vp to his mercy. The performance whereof if they but deferred, nothing but extremity was to be expected. The report wherof made the Rebels diſband, each one fearing leaſt himſelfe might helpe to make vp the number of this *Hecatombe*.

*Insurrection
in Yorke-
ſhire.*

This blaze was yet ſcarce quenched, when within ſix dayes another far more dangerous, kindled by the ſame accidents, bewraied it ſelfe in *Yorke-ſhire*, where no fewer than forty thouſand had gathered together, naming themſelues *Fellowes of the holy Pilgrimage*; and that the ſpecious pretext of Religion might palliate their madneſſe, they in their Enſignes on the one ſide portraied the ſaviour of the world hanging on the Croſſe, on the other ſide the Chalice, and the Hoſt by them called the Body of our Lord. They ſurpriſed many of the Nobility, as EDWARD LEE Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, (hee that writ againſt ERASMVS) the Lords DARCY and HVSSEY, beſides many Knights and Gentlemen, whom they forced to be

1536.

be sworne to their party, whereto it is very probable some of them were much against their wills, who notwithstanding suffered for it afterward vpon a scaffold. Against these Rebels were sent the Dukes of *Norfolke* and *Suffolke*, the Marquis of *Excester*, and the Earle of *Sbrensbury*, who endeavoured peaceably to compose all matters, and to bring this corrupt Body to it's former temper without Phlebotomy. For they knew they were to deale with such a base sort of people, to whom if they gaue the overthrow, yet would their victory be inglorious; neither could they promise themselves so happy successe against the most active and hardy bodies, and most enured to warfare of the whole Realme: besides, despaire had cast them into the extremes either of victory or death, resolutely determining not to fly to seeke an ignominious end at a gallowes, which if they escaped, they could expect no other then an accustomed miserable life more intolerable then the most horrid torturing death. These reasons made these Nobles vnwilling to hazard a battaile. But the Rebels desperate resolution admitted no parley, wherefore by consent of both Armies the field was appointed on the Eue of the Saints *Simon* and *Iude*. Betweene both Armies did run a little Brooke so shallow, that on the Eve of the battaile it was in most places passable for footmen even without danger of wetting their feet: but that night (God abhorring the effusion of so much *English* blood) a raine (and that no great one) fell, which so raised this little Brooke (the like whereof never happened there before) that it became impassable both for horse and man, which hindered the meeting of the two Armies. This chance did so worke in the superstitious and giddy heads of this Rout, that they persuaded themselves, God by this prodigy did manifestly forbid their intended battaile. Wherefore

pardon

1536.

Scarborough
Castle besie-
ged.

pardon being againe offered (as it had formerly beene) as well to the Leaders and Gentry, as the rest who had beene either authors or partakers in this tumult, finding it confirmed by the King, with promise moreover, that he would have a care that these things whereof they complained, should be redressed, they laying aside their Armes, peaceably repaired each one to his home. They in the heat of this their fury had for fixe weekes straightly besieged *Scarborough Castle* then kept by Sir RALPH EVERS of the noble Family of EVERS, who without any other garrison than of his household Servants and Tenants, and so slenderly victualled, that for twenty dayes together they sustained themselves with bread and water, manfully defended it against their furious attempts, and kept it vntill the Commotion was appeased. For which brave service the King made him leader of the Forces appointed for the defence of the Marches towards *Scotland*; which hee with great credit performed, vntill he was in the yeare of our Lord 1545, vn fortunately slaine.

Rebellion in
Ireland.

Neither was the Estate of *Ireland* more peaceable then of *England*. GIRALD FITZ-GIRALD Earle of *Kildare* having been twelve yeares Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, was for some slight matters removed, called into *England*, and condemned to death; which punishment hee through the malice of WOLSEY had vndergone, had not friendship shewed it's effects in the Lieutenant of the Tower, to whose custody the Earle was committed. He having received a Mandate for the execution of the Earle, durst hazard the displeasure of the potent Cardinall, to save his friend. Wherefore he repaires to the King at midnight, desirous to know his Maiesties pleasure concerning the Earle: who not onely disapproved the Mandate, but also pardoning the Earle, received him

1536.

him into his favour, and a few yeares after restored him to his former dignitie of Lord Deputy. But these garboiles happening in *England*, hee is for as slight suspitions as before, revoked, and commanded to attend at the Counsaile Table, where by his answers hee appeared not altogether so innocent, but that hee was againe committed to the Tower. Before his departure out of *Irland*, the King had commanded him to substitute some one in his place, for whose faith & diligence he would vnder-take. Hee had a Sonne named THOMAS, little above twenty yeares old, a haughty and stout young Lord, very ingenious, and exceedingly affecting his Father. To this Sonne, as to another PHAETON he commits the guidance of his Chariot.

— *Sed quæ non viribus istis
Munera conveniunt, nec tam puerilibus annis,*

which indeed proved fatall to them both, and to almost the whole Family. For no sooner was the Earle imprisoned, but report (raised as is coniectured by his enemies) beheaded him, threatening the like to his off-spring and brethren, whose destruction the King had most certainly resolved. The author of this report was vncertaine, and the young Lord as rashly credulous, who taking Armes, solicited the aid of his friends against the Kings injustice. Hee had then five Vnckles brethren to his Father, three of which at first dissuaded him from these violent proceedings. But passion had excluded reason; and they at length associate themselves with their Nephew, with whome they were involved in the same ruine. Many others flocking

1536.

flocking vnto him, hee had suddenly raised a great Army, wherewith marching vp and downe the Countrey, hee robbed and killed them who refused to obey him. And among the rest, hee permitted the Archbishop of *Dublin* to be murdered in his fight. The poore Earle already afflicted with a palsey, was so stricken to the heart with the newes of this tumult, that hee but a few dayes survived the knowledge of his unhappinesse. The King leauing great Forces, quickly curbed the unruly Youth, and after some moneths forced him to yeeld. His Vnkles were either taken, or willingly submitted themselves. All of them were sent to *London*, and there brought to their answer. There goes a Story, that those three Vnkles who endeavoured to restraine their headstrong Nephew, did halfe presume on the Kings clemency, vntill in the passage demanding of the Master the name of the Ship wherein they sailed; and vnderstanding it was called *The Cow*, bethinking themselves of a certaine Prophecy, *That fīue Sonnes of an Earle should in the belly of a Cow be carried into England neuer to returne*; they forthwith despaired of pardon. The event approved the skill of the Wizard: For some enemies to this noble Family incensing the King, by suggesting, that hee should never expect to settle *Irland* as long as any of the race of the FITZ-GIRALDS remained, easily prevailed with the King for their execution. In regard whereof I cannot blame GIRALD the Brother of THOMAS, who trusting not to the weake plea of his innocence, then sicke of the Measles as hee was, sought by making an escape, to set himselfe out of the reach of malice. Being therefore packed vp in a bundle of cloathes, hee was priuately conueied to
one

one of his Friends, with whome hee lurked vntill hee found an opportunity of escaping into *France*, where hee was for a time favourably received by the King. But long hee could not be there secure, the Agents of H E N R Y pressing hard, That by the League all Fugitives were to be delivered: wherefore he went thence into the *Netherlands*; where finding himselfe in no lesse danger then before, hee fled into *Italy* to R E I G N A L D P O O L E, who maintained and vsed him very nobly, and at length procured him to be restored to his Countrey and the Honors of his Ancestors.

The mention of P O O L E falls fit with our time, hee being this yeare on the two and twentieth of *December* by Pope P A V L the Fourth chosen into the Colledge of Cardinalls. Hee was neere of blood to the King, who first bestowed learning on him, and afterward finding his modesty and excellent disposition, conferred on him the Deanry of *Excester*. But trauailing afterwards to foraine Vniuersities, hee was in *Italy* quickly bewitched with the sorceries of the *Circe* of *Rome*, insomuch that hee became a deadly enemy to his Fosterer, his Prince, his Kinsman. For when hee would neither allow of the divorce from the Lady C A T H A R I N E, nor the abrogating of the authority of the *Pope*, and openly condemned other the Kings proceedings in Ecclesiasticall affaires, refusing also to obey the King, who commanded him home; H E N R Y disposed of his Deanry, and withdrew the large stipend which he had yearely allowed him. The *Pope* therefore intending to make vse of this man as an engine of battery against the King (and being induced by the commendations of Cardinall C O N T A R E N) bestowed on him a Cardinalls *Hat*, and was thereby assured of him, who had of late beene suspected to

Cardinall
Poole.

1536.

haue beene seasoned with the Leauen of purer Doctrine. But of that hereafter.

Anno Dom. 1537. Reg. 29.

1537.

Rebels executed.

THe accidents of this yeare were tragicall, and *England* the Scene of bloud and deaths of many famous Personages. On the third of *February* was THOMAS FITZ-GIRALD beheaded for treason, his five Vnkles hanged, drawne, and quartered, and their members fixed over the gates of *London*. The same moneth, NICHOLAS MYS-GRAVE and THOMAS GILBY, for that stirring a new rebellion, they had besieged *Carlisle*, were executed.

The tenth of *March* was IOHN PASLEW Bachelour of Divinity and Abbot of *Whalley*, put to death at *Lancaster*, and with him one EASTGATE a Monke of the same place: and three dayes after them another Monke called HAYDOCKE was hanged at *Whalley*. The Abbots of *Sauley* and *Woburne* with two Monkes make the like end at *Woburne*. And a little after, one Doctor MACARELL, another Abbot, the Vicar of *Louth*, two other Priests, and seven Lay men. All these, for as much as I can any way collect, were condemned for hauing beene especiall furtherers of the late rebellions. But the Chieftaines and nobler sort were reserved vntill *June*, at what time the Lords *Darcey* & *Hussey* were beheaded, the one at *Lincolne*, the other at *London*; Sir ROBERT CONSTABLE, Sir THOMAS PERCY, Sir FRANCIS BIGOT, Sir STEPHEN HAMILTON, and Sir IOHN BULMER were likewise put to death: MARGARET Lady

1537.

Lady to Sir I O H N B V L M E R was burned at *London* : W I L L I A M T H V R S T Abbot of *Fountains*, A D A M S V D B V R Y Abbot of *Gervaux*, the Abbot of *Rivers*, W O L D Prior of *Birlington*, G E O R G E L V M L E Y, N I C H O L A S T E M P E S T Esquires, and R O B E R T A S K E, with many others, as having beene partakers in the late Insurrection, did likewise partake in punishment for the same. And for a Commotion in *Somerset-shire* in Aprill were three scorecondemned, whereof onely fourteene suffered.

But least any one may wonder at these severe and vnheard of courses taken against the Clergy, I thinke it not amisse to relate what S L E I D A N writes of Cardinall P O O L E, who set forth one or two Bookes, which as yet lurking at *Rome*, about this time were spred abroad in *Germany*, and came at length to the Kings hands. Wherein directing his stile to the King, hee sharply reprehendeth him for taking upon him the title of Head of the Church, which onely belonged to the Pope, who is C H R I S T S Vicar on earth, &c. Then hee proceeds to the matter of his Divorce, alledging, That hee neither out of terrour of conscience, nor feare of God, (as hee pretended) but out of lust and blinde loue had forsaken the Lady C A T H A R I N E his Wife, whom his Brother Prince A R T H V R a weake young man, and but fourteene yeares old, had left a Virgin : That it was not lawfull for him to marry A N N E B O L E N, whose Sister hee had before used as his Concubine : And that hee himselfe had confessed to the Emperour and others, That hee found the Lady C A T H A R I N E a Maide. Hee also eagerly reproveth him for

Cardinall
Poole writes
against the
King.

1537.

seeking the opinions of the Universities concerning his former marriage, and triumphing in his owne wickednesse, when some of them had pronounced it incestuous: and that hee might bee ashamed to prefer the Daughter of a Whore, before one that was legitimate, and a most Vertuous Princeesse. Then speaking of the death of the Bishop of Rochester and Sir THOMAS MORE, hee detests his cruelty. Hee then rips up what tyranny hee had exercised over his Subiects of all degrees, in what miseries hee had plunged this flourishing Realme, what dangers he incurred from the Emperour, in regard of the iniury offered to his Aunt, and the overthrow of Religion, and that hee could not expect any aid either from his owne or foraine Nations, who had deserved so ill of the Christian Commonwealth. After this, hee whets on the Emperour to revenge the dishonour of his Family; affirming that Turcisme (meaning the Protestant Religion) had found entertainment in England and Germany. And after many bitter reproofes, hee invites HENRY to repentance, perswading him, That for these evils there was no other remedy, but to returne to the bosome of the Church, in the defence whereof (a most glorious example) hee had made vse not onely of his Sword, but his Pen also.

Neither did the Cardinall onely by Booke, but by other personall endeavours manifest his spleene against the King, beeing sent Embassadour from the Pope to the French, vnder colour of reconciling him with the Emperour; but his chiefe errant was, to combine them both against HENRY. Whereof hee having intelligence, did by his Agent earnestly sollicite FRANCIS, That in regard of their mutuall amity, hee would cause POOLE to bee apprehended, as guilty

guilty of high Treason, and sent to him, where hee should vndergo the punishment due therefore. But because Religion and the Law of Nations had beene violated in betraying any (especially the *Popes*) Embassadour, the *French* could not yeeld to the Kings request: but to shew that hee would administer no cause of offence, hee refused to admit of his Embassy, and commanded him speedily to depart out of his Dominions.

HERCVLES stature might be guessed at by the proportion of his foot; and by this one mans endeavours, HENRY was taught what, if need were, hee was to expect of his Clergy. So that hee was easily induced as any of them offended, to send him to his grave, for that a dead Lion biteth not: And this course beeing taken with his professed enemies, the feare of the like punishment would secure him of the rest.

On the twelfth of *October*, the Queene having long suffered the throwes of a most difficult travaile, and such a one, wherein either the Mother or the Infant must necessarily perish, out of her wombe was ripped Prince EDWARD, who after succeeded his Father in the Crowne. The Queene onely surviving two daies, died on the fourteenth of *October*, and on the twelfth of *November* was with great pompe buried at *Windsore* in the middle of the Quire, on whose Tombe is inscribed this Epitaph:

Phoenix

1537.

The birth of
Prince Ed-
ward.

1537.

*Phoenix IANA iacet nato Phœnice; dolendum,
Secula Phœnices nulla tulisse duas.*

Here a Phœnix lieth, whose death
To another Phœnix gave breath:
It is to be lamented much,
The World at once ne'r knew two such.

Seimour
Earle of
Hertford.

Fitz-Willi-
am Earle of
Southamp-
ton.
Powlet and
Russell rise.

On the eighteenth of *October* the Infant was created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornewall*, and Earle of *Chester*: and with him his Vnkle EDWARD SEIMOUR brother to the deceased Queene, Lord *Beauchampe*, and Earle of *Hertford*; which Honours onely (and not those afterwards conferred on him) hee left to his posterity. WILLIAM FITZ-WILLIAMS Lord Admirall, was made Earle of *Southampton*. Then also WILLIAM POWLET and IOHN RVSSSELL began their races in the lists of Honour; POWLET being made Treasurer, and RVSSSELL Comptroller of the Kings Household, and both sworne of the Privy Counsaile. Neither was here their *non ultra*, the one being afterwa'd raised to Lord Treasurer of *England* and Marquis of *Winchester*, the other to Earle of *Bedford*, wherein hee dying in the yeare 1554, his Sonne FRANCIS that pious old man, and liberall releiuer of the Poore, succeeded him, who at the very instant of his death lost his Sonne FRANCIS slaine by a Scot Anno 1587. Which FRANCIS was Father to EDWARD Earle of *Bedford*, and brother to WILLIAM by King JAMES created Lord RVSSSELL. POWLET living to be a very decrepit old man, had to his Successour his Nephew by his Sonne WILLIAM,

A M,

AM, named also WILLIAM the sole Marquis of England.

1537.

And to end this yeare with death, as it began, THOMAS HOWARD youngest sonne to the Duke of *Norfolke*, having beene fifteene moneths imprisoned for affiancing himselfe without the Kings consent to MARGARET Daughter to ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS Earle of *Angus* and Lady MARGARET the Kings Sister, on the first day of *November*, to the vnspeakeable good of this Island deceased in the Tower. For this MARGARET beeing after married to MATHEW Earle of *Lenox*, had by him HENRY the Father of King JAMES of sacred memory, the most happy Vnitor of divided *Britaine*.

Anno Dom. 1538. Reg. 30.

1538.

IT is at length after many ages resolved, That through the superstitious abuse of Images, God was robbed of his due honour. The King much prone to Reformation (specially if any thing might be gotten by it) thought it fit to remove this stumbling block, and the rather, for that hee conceived his Treasury would be thereby supplied. There were some Images of more especiall fame, and shrines of reputed Saints, whereunto Pilgrimages were made from the farthest parts of the Kingdome, nay even from foraine Countries also: the Oblations whereto were so many and so rich, that they not onely sufficed for the maintenance of Priests and Monkes, but also to the heaping vp of incredible wealth. The Shrine of THOMAS BECKET Archbishop of *Canterbury* was covered with plates of gold, and laden with gifts

*The abuse of
Images re-
strained.*

*Beckets
shrine demo-
lish:d.*

1538.

* Vniones.

The Image
of our Lady
of Walling-
ham.

Frier Forest
makes good a
Prophecy.

guifts of inestimable value. The blinde zeale of those and former times, had decked it with gemmes, chaines of gold of great weight, and * pearles of that large size, which in our Language finde no proper terme. This Tombe was razed, and his bones found entire; in steed of whose head the Monkes vsually obtruded the skull of some other, peradventure better deserving then did their supposed Martyr. The spoile of this Monument, wherein nothing was meaner then gold, filled two chests so full, that each of them required eight strong men for the portage. Among the rest was a stone of especiall lustre called the *Royall of France*, offered by LEWIS the Seventh, King of France, in the yeare 1179, together with a great massy cup of gold, at what time hee also bestowed an annuity on the Monkes of that Church, of an hundred tunnes of wine. This stone was afterward highly prized by the King, who did continually weare it on his thumbe. ERASMVS speakes much of the magnificence of this Monument, as also of the Image of our Lady of *Walsingham*, both which hee had seene and admired. This Image was also stripped of whatsoever worthy thing it had, the like being also done in other the like places, and the statues and bones of the dead digged vp and burned, that they might bee no further cause of superstition. Among the rest of these condemned Images there was a Crucitex in *South-Wales*, called of the Inhabitants, *Darvell Gatharen*, concerning which there was a kinde of prophecy, That it should one day fire a whole Forest. It chanced that at this time one Doctor FOREST a Frier Observant, who had formerly taken the Oath of Supremacy, was vpon his relapse apprehended and condemned of Treason and Heresy: For this Fryer a new Gallowes was erected, whereon hee was hanged by the arme pits, and vnderneath him

him a fire made of this Image, wherewith hee was burned, and so by his death made good the Prophecy.

1538.

Great was the Treasure which the King raised of the spoiles of Churches and Religious Houses. But whether the guilt of sacrilege (adhering like a consuming canker) made this ill gotten treasure vnprofitable, or that he found he had need of greater supplies to withstand the dangers that threatened him from abroad, not content with what hee had already corraded, hee casts his eyes on the wealth of the Abbeyes that had escaped the violence of the former tempest: and not expecting (as hee deemed it) a needlesse Act of Parliament, seizeth on the rest of the Abbeyes and Religious Houses of the Realme. And first hee begins with that at *Canterbury*, dedicated to *AUGUSTINE* the *English* Apostle, who was there interred. This being the first Fruits of Christianity among this Nation (I meane the *Saxons*, for the *Britans* had beene watred with streames derived even from the Fountaines Apostolique, far more pure then were those later overflowes of *AUGUSTINE*) hee invades, expells the Monkes, and divides their meanes betweene his Exchequer and Courtiers. *Battaile* Abbey built by *WILLIAM* the Conquerour in the same place where by the overthrow of *HAROLD* the last *Saxon* King hee purchased this Kingdome to himselfe and his posterity, did also run the same fortune. So that it is not so much to be wondered at, if those at *Merton* in *Surrey*, *Stratford* in *Essex*, *Lewis* in *Sussex*, the *Charterhouse*, *Blacke-Friers*, *Gray-Friers*, and *White-Friers* in *London*, felt the fury of the same Whirlewinde.

Saint Augustines at Canterbury,

Battaile Abbey,

and others suppressed.

At the same time among many other Reformati-
ons in this Church, that wholesome Iniunction was

Y

one,

1538.

*The Bible translated.**The Marquis of Excester and others beheaded.*

one, whereby the Bible translated and printed in English, was commanded to be kept in every parish Church, and to bee conveniently placed where any that were so desirous, might reade therein.

They who were more eagerly addicted to the superstition of their Ancestours, brooked not these proceedings, among whom were chiefe HENRY COURTNEY Marquis of Excester, HENRY Lord Mountague brother to Cardinall POOLE, and Sir EDWARD NEVILL brother to the Lord ABERGAVENNY, who on the fifth day of November, vpon the accusation of Sir GEOFFREY POOLE Brother to the Lord MOUNTAGUE, were committed to the Tower, for having maintained intelligence with the Cardinall, and conspired the Kings destruction: for which they were on the third of the ensuing January, the Lord AUDLEY sitting high Steward for the time, arraigned and condemned, and on the ninth of the same moneth beheaded. Two Priests named CROFTS and COLINS, with one HOLLAND a Mariner, as partakers in the same guilt, were hanged and quartered at Tiburne. This COURTNEY was by the Fathers side of a very noble discent, deriving himselfe from the blood Royall of France, by HUGH COURTNEY created Earle of Devonshire by EDWARD the Third. But by his mother hee far more neerely participated of the Blood Royall of England, being Sonne to CATHARINE Daughter to EDWARD the Fourth, who was Sister to Queene ELIZABETH the Mother of King HENRY. The King long favoured him as his Cousen germane, but at length in regard of his neere Alliance to the Crowne, became jealous of his Greatnesse, whereof hee had lately given more then

then sufficient testimony, in suddenly arming some thousands to oppose against the *Yorke-Shire* Rebels. The consideration whereof made HENRY gladly entertaine any occasion to cut off this Noble Gentleman.

About the same time IOHN LAMBERT a religious and learned man was also condemned, the King himselfe sitting Iudge. This LAMBERT being accused of Heresy, appealed from his Ordinary to the King; who fearing least hee should be accounted a *Lutheran*, resolved vpon this occasion to manifest to the World how hee stood affected in Religion. To this end summoning as many of the Bishops and other Peeres of the Realme as could conveniently be present, he caused Scaffolds to be built in *Westminster* Hall, from whence the people might be spectators and witnesses of the Acts of that day. On the right hand of the King were seated the Bishops, and behinde them the Iudges and chief Lawyers of the Realme: at his left hand sate the Temporall Lords, and behinde them the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber. LAMBERT being brought to the Bar, DAY Bishop of *Chichester*, by the Kings appointment made an Oration, wherein he declared the cause of this meeting; saying,

That LAMBERT hauing beene accused of Heresy before his Ordinary, had made his Appeale vnto the King, as if expecting from his Maiesty more fauour for Heresy, then from the Bishop. So that he now found it be true, whereof hee had been

1538.

Lambert
condemned
& burned.

1538.

oft informed, That the credulous People were verily persuaded, that his Maieſty abhorring the Religion of his Anceſtors, had embraced the new Tenets lately broached in Germany. True it was, the tyranny of the Court of Rome had beene troublesome to his Predeceſſors, but to Him intolerable, and therefore had Hee shaken it off: That Religion might no longer patronize Idleneſſe, Hee had expelled Monkes, who were no other then Drones in the Beehive: Hee had taken away the idolatrous worſhip of Images, had permitted to his Subjects the reading and knowledge of Gods Word, hitherto prohibited by the Church of Rome, leaſt their wiles and couſenages ſhould be diſcovered: and had made reformation in ſome other things peradventure of leſſe moment, which no man could deny, would much redound to the good both of Church and Common-wealth. But as for other things, Hee had determined there ſhould be no change in the Church during his Raigne: Which his Reſolution Hee now intended publiquely to manifeſt. His Maieſties deſire was, That the Delinquent renouncing his Errours, ſhould ſuffer himſelfe to be received into the boſome of the Church:

(Church : to which end partly, and partly to shew that Hee thirsted not after any ones blood, out of his clemency Hee had procured the presence of those Graue and Learned men (meaning the Bishops) who by Authority and force of Arguments should if it were possible, bring backe this straied Sheepe into the Fold of the Church. But if hee perversly oppugned the Truth, and all persuasions notwithstanding, became immoveable, Hee would by this mans exemplary punishment make knowne, what others should in the like Case expect, and instruct the Judges and Magistrates, what they ought to do therein.

1538.

The Bishop having ended, the King demanded of LAMBERT, What hee thought of the presence of CHRISTs body in the Sacrament? Whose answer being little to the Kings liking, reasons and arguments were produced, as if a Disputation in the Schooles, and not a Iusticiary Session had beene appointed. Five whole houres this Disputation lasted, the King being as it were Prior Opponent, Archbishop CRANMER also, and nine other Bishops forcibly pressing vpon poore LAMBERT. But neither this course, nor the battery of threats and terrors prevailing against his constancy, the King commanded the Lord CROMWELL to passe sentence of condemnation vpon him, by vertue whereof within a day or two after hee

1538.

hee was burned. Neither this dreadfull Sentence, nor his torturing death did any way appale him, which hee so little regarded, that going to his death, hee merrily tooke his breakfast with some Gentlemen into whose company he chanced, as if hee had beene going to some sportfull game, rather then his execution.

Anno Dom. 1539. Reg. 31.

1539.

Margaret
Countesse of
Salisbury
condemned.

ON the third of *March*, Sir NICHOLAS CAREW Knight of the Garter, and Master of the Horse, was beheaded for being of Counsaile with the Marquis of *Excester*, and the Lord MOUNTAGVE. And on the eight and twentieth of *Aprill* a Parliament began, wherein MARGARET Countesse of *Salisbury* Mother to Cardinall POOLE and Daughter to GEORGE Duke of *Clarence* who was brother to EDWARD the Fourth, was attainted of high Treason, and condemned without hearing, and with her the Cardinall her Sonne, GERTRUDE Widow to the Marquis of *Excester*, Sir ADRIAN FORTESCUE, and Sir THOMAS DINGLEY. DINGLEY and FORTESCUE were beheaded on the tenth of *Iuly*, and the Countesse being then aged threescore and ten yeares, suffered two yeares after.

The subver-
sion of Reli-
gious Houses

In the same Parliament it was inacted, That the King might erect new Episcopall Sees in oportune places of the Realme. For the performance whereof, and of some other things no lesse specious

1539.

cious, the late dissolution of those Abbeyes whereon the King seised, was confirmed, and all Religious Houses as yet vn suppressed, were granted to the King for ever. Vpon notice whereof, many either out of guilt of conscience, or desirous to purchase the Kings favour, surrendred their charge even before they were required. And first of all the Abbot and Convent of Saint *Albans* (the first Abbot of the Realme, as Saint ALBAN was the first Martyr: which Honour was conferred on this House by Pope ADRIAN the Fourth, whose Father had long lived a Monasticall life therein) forsake their rich Abbey seated neere the ruines of *Verolanium* once a great and antient City, and leaue it to the mercy of the Courtiers. Which dereliction afforded matter of example to many other, few enioying that security of conscience, that they durst lay claime to their owne. Onely three were found, whose innocence made them so regardlesse of threats, promises, or reward, that they could never be induced to betray the goods of their Churches to the mercilesse impiety of sacrilegious Harpyes: which three were JOHN BECH Abbot of *Colchester* in *Essex*, HUGH FARINGDON Abbot of the Abbey of *Reding*, built by HENRY the First for the place of his Sepulture, and RICHARD WHITING Abbot of *Glastonbury* one of the stateliest and antientest Monasteries of *Europe*, being first builded by IOSEPH of *Arimathea*, who buried the body of our Saviour CHRIST, and is himselfe there interred, as is also (beside some *Saxon* Kings) that most renowned King ARTHUR, whose glorious Acts, had they beene vndertaken by a fit Historian, would have ranked him among the antient Worthies without the helpe of a fabulous Romance. Against these men therefore, other courses not availing, that one was

Some Ab-
bots execu-
ted.

Glastonbu-
ry.

1539.

one was taken of administring the Oath of Supremacy, which they refusing, are as enemies to the Estate condemned of high Treason. BECH was hanged at Colchester, and FARINGTON with two Priests named RVG and OGNION at Reding. WHITING a man very aged, and by reason thereof, scarce perceiving that he had beene condemned, returning from the place of Iudgement (which was in the Bishops Palace at Wells distant from Glastonbury foure miles) with conceit that hee was restored to his Abbey, was suddenly rapt vp to the top of the Tor (a hill that surveies the country round about) and without leave of bidding his Convent farewell, which hee earnestly begged, was presently hanged, the staine of ingratitude sticking fast to the authors of this speedy execution, of whom the poore Abbot is reported to have better deserved. With WHITING were two Monkes also executed named ROGER JAMES and IOHN THORNE, their bodies all drawne and quartered, and set vp in divers places of the Countrey. The punishment of these few so terrified the rest, that without more ado they permitted all to the Kings disposall. The number of those that were suppress is not easily cast: But the names of the chieft, and whose Abbots had voices among the Peeres in the higher House of Parliament, are these:

Saint

S. PETERS in <i>Westminster</i> ,	Saint M A R I E S in
S. ALBANS,	<i>Yorke</i> ,
S. Edmundsbury,	<i>Teuksbury</i> ,
S. BENETS of <i>Hulme</i> .	<i>Reding</i> ,
<i>Berdney</i> ,	<i>Battaile</i> ,
<i>Shrewsbury</i> ,	<i>Winchcomb</i> ,
<i>Crowland</i> ,	<i>Hide by Winchester</i> ,
<i>Abingdon</i> ,	<i>Cirencester</i> ,
<i>Euesham</i> ,	<i>Waltham</i> ,
<i>Glocester</i> ,	<i>Walmesbury</i> ,
<i>Ramsey</i> ,	<i>Thorney</i> .

Saint AUGUSTINES in	Saint I OH N S in Col-
<i>Canterbury</i> ,	<i>chester</i> ,
<i>Selbey</i> ,	<i>Corventrey</i> ,
<i>Peterborough</i> ,	<i>Tavestocke</i> .

1539.
A catalogue
of the Ab-
bots who had
voices among
the Peeres.

The King, that hee might some way supply the want of the suffrages of so many learned and wise men in the Parliament House, as also that of so great a prey hee might consecrate (if not the tenth to HERCULES, at least) some Part to God, according to his promise erected some new Bishopricks: wherof one was at *Westminster*, a place so neere and contiguous to *London*, that it might rather seeme a part of the Suburbs thereof, than a distinct City. But a City it is, and so ennobled with many stately monuments, that for beauty it contendeth with most in Christendome: In it are the chiefe Seat of the Prince, and Palaces of the Nobility, the chiefe seats of Iustice in the Land, the most magnificent Church, wherein are interred most of our Kings and Nobles, whose sumptuous Monuments render it vnpareld even by the world. Another was at *Oxford* in the Colledge founded by Cardinall WOLSEY. The rest at *Peterborough*, *Bristol*,

New Bisho-
pricks ere-
cted.

1539.

stoll, Cbester, and Gloucester. Westminster was by Queene MARY againe reduced to an Abbey, and furnished with Monkes of Saint BENET'S Order: whome Queene ELIZABETH againe expelled, and converted the revenues of the Bishopricke to the maintenance of Schollers and other pious vses. As for the other Seas, they remaine to this day. From those antient Cathedrall Churches wherein Monkes were seated, nothing was taken away: onely Cannons were placed therein steed of Monkes, as likewise in the Cathedrall Churches of the new erected Bishoprickes. The Churches, wherein antiently Cannons and Prebendaries were instituted, are

In England,

Yorke,
London,
Lincolne,
Sarisbury,
Excester,

Wells,
Lichfield,
Hereford,
Chicbester.

In Wales,

S. DAVIDS,
Landaf,

Bangor,
S. ASAPH.

The

*The Cathedralls founded with
Monkes, were*

1539.

Canterbury,
Winchester,
Ely,
Norwich,

Worcester,
Rochester,
Duresme,
Carlisle.

*The new Seas where primarily
were Abbeyes, are*

Oxford,
Bristol,
Glocester,

Chester,
Peterborough.

So there are six and twenty Bishopricks within this Realme, and in every Cathedrall, Archdeacons, Prebendaries, and other Ministers, as also a Deane who governes the rest, vnles it be in S. Davids, where the Chanter; and Landaf, where the Archdeacon is Head of the Chapter.

These things thus ordered, the King still jealous least it should be conceived that hee had forsaken the Religion of his Fathers, began to thunder out against the maintainers of new Tenets, and much against CRANMERS will, by Parliament enacted the Law of the Six Articles, the summe whereof was,

1 *That if any one should deny the True
and Reall presence of the Body of CHRIST
in the Sacrament, or should maintaine, That
the substance of Bread and Wine remained
after the words of Consecration pronounced*

*The Law of
the Six Ar-
ticles.*

1539.

by the Priest, he should be burned as an Heretique.

2 If any should deny the Sacrament to be sufficiently administred vnder one Species only:

3 Or should hold it lawfull for Priests to be married, but much more he that having entred into holy Orders, should presume to take a Wife:

4 Or that Chastity vowed vpon mature deliberation was not to be kept:

5 Or that private Masses ought not be celebrated in the Church of England, or els where:

6 Or that Auricular Confession was not expedient; hee should for his errours vndergo losse of life by hanging.

Latimer and
Schaxton re-
signe their
Bishoprickes.

These Lawes like those of *Draco* written in bloud, were the destruction of multitudes, & silenced those who had been hitherto furtherers of Reformation. Among whom *HUGH LATIMER* and *NICHOLAS SCHAXTON* Bishops, the one of *Worcester*, the other of *Salisbury*, were remarkable, who that they might quietly enioy themselves, the Parliament being scarce dissolved, did both on one day, viz. the first of *July*, resigne their Bishoprickes. *LATIMER* (who for the freedome of his conscience could as willingly resigne his life, as hee did this rich Bishopricke, being burned for it in *Queene MARIES* raigne) after his

his Resignation taking off his Rochet, being a merry conceited man, with a little leape lifted himselfe from the ground, saying, *That hee felt himselfe much more light and quicke, now hee had freed himselfe of so great a burthen.*

HENRY (in regard of his wiving disposition) had long continued a Widdower. And that he should at length marry, the consideration of his Estate being surrounded with Enemies passionate in the Popes cause, perswaded him. Wherein he also gave eare to CROMWELL, who advised him to combine with those Estates, whom the burthen of the Popes tyranny had forced to the same courses and like feares. By whose assistance he might countermine the secret practises of Rome. A counsaile without doubt good and befitting the times, but producing the effects of Ill ones, proving (as is thought) Pernicious to the Guier. For the treatise of such a Match, in September came into England FREDERICKE Duke and Elector of Saxony, FREDERICKE Duke of Bavaria, OTHO HENRY Count Palatine of Rhine, and the Chancellour of the Duke of Cleve, with some others, who were for eight dayes royally entertained by the King at Windsor, where the marriage with ANNE Sister to the Duke of Cleve being concluded, they returned to their owne Countries.

This yeare died MARGARET Queene of Scotland, Sister to King HENRY, who was buried at the Charterhouse in the towne of S. JOHN, neere the Tombe of JAMES the First.

Anno

1539.

The arrivall
of certaine
Princes of
Germany in
England, for
the treatise of
a Match be-
twene the
King & La-
dy Anne of
Cleve.

1540.

The King
marrieth the
Lady of
Cleve.

Cromwell
created Earle
of Essex, and
within three
months after
beheaded.

Anno Dom. 1540. Reg. 32.

ON the Eve of the Circumcision the Lady ANNE of Cleve destinated to the Kings bed, arrived at Dorver, was on the third of January triumphantly received at Greenwich, and on the feast of the Epiphany ritely married to the King.

On the twelfth of March HENRY BOURCHIER Earle of Essex, the antientest Earle of the Realme, throwne by an unruly young horse which he sought to breake, brake his necke: by whose death the Inheritance was devolved to his daughter, and from her decessing without Issue, to the Family of DEVREX, which Family in regard of their claime by discent, was by Queene ELIZABETH advanced to the Earledome of Essex. But in the meane time CROMWELL (yet chiefe in the Kings favour) was on the eighteenth of Aprill created Earle of Essex.

And here behold the frailty of humane affaires. The current of few yeares had from very meane beginnings brought CROMWELL to the height of honour; insomuch that his happinesse was admired by all, envied by many: But Fortune intending a Tragedy, he is vnexpectedly apprehended sitting at the Counsaile Table, and committed to the Tower, where he continued vntill his execution. For in this Parliament begun the twelfth of Aprill, hee is accused of Treason and Heresy, without being brought to his answer condemned, and on the twenty eighth of Iuly beheaded. This King may well be censured of cruell inconstancy, who
could

1540.

could so easily dispence with the death of those whome he had admitted to intimate familiarity, and made vse of their counsailes and indeavours ; as if he had advanced them to no other end, but to depresse them. WOLSEY had his turne, CROMWELL succeeds, whose sudden downefall there want not those who attribute to Gods Iustice inflicted on him for the Sacriledge (whereof hee was reported to be the Author) committed in the subversion of so many Religious Houses. And indeed even they who confesse the rowling of so many vnprofitable Epicures out of their dennes, and the abolishing of Superstition, wherewith the Divine Worship had by them beene polluted, to have beene an act of singular Iustice and Piety ; do notwithstanding complaine of the losse of so many stately Churches dedicated to Gods service, the goods whereof were no otherwise imploied, then for the satisfaction of private mens covetousnesse : and although many have abused the Vaile of Religion, yet was that Monasticall life instituted according to the pious example of antient Fathers, that they who found themselves vnfit for the execution of worldly affaires, (as many such there are) might in such their voluntary retirements spend their dayes in Divine Writings or Meditations : and are verily perswaded, that for the taking away of these things, God was offended both with the King and CROMWELL. But SLEIDAN peradventure comes neerer the matter, touching the immediate cause of his death.

About this time (saith hee) the King of England beheadeth THOMAS CROMWELL, whome hee had from fortunes answerable to his low parentage, raised to great Honours ; repudiates the Lady ANNE of Cleve, and marrieth CATHARINE HOWARD

Lady Anne
of Cleve re-
pudiated.

1540.

WARD Daughter to the Lord EDMOND HOWARD, who was Brother to the Duke of Norfolk. CROMWELL had beene procurer of the Match with ANNE. But the King loving CATHARINE, is thought to have beene perswaded by her to make away CROMWELL, whome shee suspected to be a Remora to her advancement. The actions of Kings are not to be sifted too neerely, for which we are charitably to presume they haue reasons, and those inscrutable.

But let vs see the processe of this divorce. Six moneths this coniugall band lasted firme without scruple, the King and Queene giving daily testimonies of their mutuall love. On the twentieth of June the Queene is willed to remove from London, (where the King staid by reason of the Parliament) to Richmond, a place pretended in regard of the situation and aire, to be more for her health.

On the sixth of July reasons are proposed by certaine Lords purposely sent to the lower House of Parliament, demonstrating the invalidity of the Kings marriage with the Lady ANNE, so that it was lawfull for them both to marry where they pleased. The same reasons are alledged in the Convocation house, and generally approved. Whereupon the Queene also (whether forced or willing) consenting, the Parliament pronounced the marriage void.

What the allegations were is vncertaine. Some relate disability by reason of some defects to be objected to her, which seemes the more probable, for that in her Letters wherein shee submitted her selfe to the iudgement and determination of the Parliament, shee affirmed that the King never knew her carnally. Whether for this, or for that Nature having not over-liberally endowed her with beauty; but

1540.

but a private woman she became, and as such (not enduring to returne to her friends with dishonor) shee lived vpon some lands assigned her by the King, (who alwaies vsed her respectfully) vntill the fifteenth of *Iuly Anno 1557*, at what time shee ended her discontented life, and lieth burieth at *Westminster* on the South side of the Quire in a Tombe not yet finished.

Scarce had the resolution of the Convocation House, and the Decree concerning it passed both Houses, when this lusty Widower with as good successe as before, marrieth his fifth Wife *CATHARINE HOWARD*. When their nuptialls were celebrated is not knowne, but on the eighth of *August* in Royall habiliments shee shewed her selfe as Queene.

*The King
marrieth
Catharine
Howard.*

The fautors of Reformation were much dismaied at the sudden vnqueening of *ANNE*: fearing (not without cause) least it proving occasion of enmity betweene *HENRY* and the Princes of *Germany*, he must of necessity rely on them who misliked our divorce from *Rome*. But the King proceeding still in the course he had begun, like a torrent bearing all before him, not onely caused three Anabaptists to be burned, but also many sincere Professors of the Truth, for not subscribing to the Six Articles. Among whome three Divines were most eminent, *viz.* *ROBERT BARNES* Doctor of Divinity, *THOMAS GERARD*, and *WILLIAM IEROM* Bachelors, who by Parliament (vnheard) being condemned for Heresie, were on the one and thirtieth committed to the torments of the mercilesse fire. At the same time and place three other Doctors of Divinity, *viz.* *POWELL*, *ABLE*, and *FETHRSTON* were hanged for denying the Kings Supremacy; the sight whereof made a *French*

*Protestants
and Papists
alike perse-
cuted.*

1540.

*The Prior of
Dancaster &
six others
hanged.*

*The Lord
Hungerford
hanged.*

man cry out in these words, *Deus bone, quomodo hic vivunt gentes? Suspenduntur Papistæ, comburuntur, Antipapistæ*; Good God, how do the People make a shift to live here, where both Papists are hanged, and Antipapists burned? In August the Prior of Dancaster and six other for defending the Institution of the life Monasticall (a crime now become as capitall as the greatest) being also condemned by Act of Parliament, were hanged.

The same day with the Lord CROMWELL, the Lord HUNGERFORD was also beheaded. As their causes were divers, so died they alike differently. CROMWELLS conscience quietly welcommed Death: to the other suffering for that most vnnaturall crime of Sodomy, Death presented it selfe with that horror, that the apprehension of it made him as impatient, as if hee had been seized with a frenzy.

1541.

*Beginnings
of a Com-
motion in
Yorke-shire.*

Anno Dom. 1541. Reg. 33.

THe late Yorke-shire Rebellion was not so thoroughly quenched, but it againe began to shew it selfe; but by the punishment of the chiefe Incendiaries it was quickly suppressed. Fourteene of the Conspirators were put to death; LEIGH a Gentlemen, THORNTON a Yeoman, and TATTERSHALL a Cloathier, at London: Sir JOHN NEVILL and ten others at Yorke. Which Commotion whether raised in favour of Religion, or being suspected that it had any abettors beyond the Seas, is thought to have hastened the death of the long since condemned Countesse of Sarisbury, who

on

on the seven and twentieth of *May* was beheaded in the Tower.

The eight and twentieth of *June* the Lord LEONARD GREY Deputy of *Irland*, did on the Tower hill publicquely vndergo the like punishment. Hee was Sonne to the Marquis of *Dorset*, neere allied to the King, and a brave martiall man, having often done his Countrey good service. But for that he had suffered his Nephew GERARD FITZGERARD (brother to THOMAS lately executed) proclaimed enemy to the Estate, to make an escape, and in revenge of some conceived private iniury had invaded the lands of the Kings friends, hee was arraigned and condemned, ending his life with a resolution befitting a brave Souldier.

The same day THOMAS FINES Lord Dacres of the South, with some other Gentlemen, for the death of one BVSBRIG slaine by them in a fray, was hanged at *Tiburne*. Many in regard of his youth and Noble Disposition, much lamented his losse, and the Kings inexorable rigour.

1541.

Lord Leonard Grey
beheaded.

The Lord
Dacres hanged.

Aa 2

Anno

1542.

Anno Dom. 1542. Reg. 34.

Queene Ca-
tharine be-
headed.

BY this time HENRY began to finde the conveniency of his change, having married one as fruitfull in *evill*, as his former wives were in *good*: who could not containe her selfe within the sacred limits of a Royall marriage bed, but must be supplied with more vigorous and active bodies, then was that of the now growing aged and vnweildy King. Alas; what is this momentary pleasure, that for it wee dare hazard a treble life, of Fame, of Body, of Soule? Heaven may be mercifull, but Fame will censure, and the enraged Lyon is implacable: such did this Queene finde him, who procured not only her to be condemned by Act of Parliament begun the sixteenth of *Ianuary*, and with her the Lady IANE Wife to the Viscount ROCHFORD, (behold the thrift of the Divine Iustice, which made her an Instrument of the punishment of her owne and others wickednesse, who by her calumnies had betrayed her owne Husband and his Sister the late beheaded Queene ANNE) but two others also long since executed, FRANCIS DERHAM and THOMAS CULPEPPER, in their double condemnation scarce sufficiently punished. DERHAM had beene too familiar with her in her virgin time, and having after attained to some publique offices in *Irland*, was by her now Queene sent for and entertained as a household servant, in which time whether hee revived his former familiarity is not

not manifest. But CULPEPPER was so plainly convict of many secret meetings with the Queene by the meanes of the Lady ROCHFORD, that the adultery was questionles. For which the Queene and the Viscontesse ROCHFORD were both beheaded within the Tower on the twelfth of February. DIRHAM had beene hanged, and CULPEPPER beheaded at Tiburne the tenth of the preceding December.

Hitherto our Kings had stiled themselves Lords of *Irland*, a Title with that rebellious Nation not deemed so sacred and dreadfull, as to force obedience: The Estates therefore of *Irland* assembled in Parliament enacted him King of *Irland*; according to which Decree he was on the three and twentieth of *January* publicly proclaimed.

About the same time ARTHUR Viscont Lisle naturall Sonne of EDWARD the Fourth, out of a surfeit of sudden ioy deceased. Two of his Servants had beene executed the preceding yeare for having conspired to betray *Calais* to the *French*, and the Viscont as being conscious committed to the Tower. But vpon manifestation of his innocence, the King sent vnto him Sir THOMAS WRIOTHSELEY Principall Secretary of Estate, by whom he signified the great content he received in the Visconts approved fidelity, the effects whereof hee should finde in his present liberty, and that degree of favour that a faithfull and beloved Vnkle deserved. The Viscont receiving such vnexpected newes imbelished with rich promises and Royall tokens (the King having sent him a Diamond of great value) of assured favour; being not sufficiently capable of so great ioy, free from all symptomes of any other disease, the ensuing

1542.
John
Ducy
of
the
Lille

*Irland made
a Kingdome.*

*The Viscont
Lisle de-
ceased of a sur-
feit of ioy.*

John
Ducy
of
the
Lille

1542.
Sir Iohn
Dudley
made Vis-
count Lisle.

ing night expired. After whose decease Sir Iohn DUDLEY was created Viscount LISLE, claiming that honour as hereditary in the right of his mother Lady ELIZABETH Sister and Heire to the Lord EDWARD GREY Viscount LISLE Wife to the late deceased Lord ARTHUR, but formerly married to EDMUND DUDLEY one of the Barons of the Exchequer, beheaded the first yeare of this Kings raigne. Which I the rather remember, for that this man afterwards memorable for his power and dignities, might have proved more happy in his Issue, then his greatnesse, had not his owne ambition betraied some of these faire sprouts to the blast of vnseasonable hopes, and nature denying any (at least lawfull) issue to the rest, the name and almost remembrance of this great Family hath ceased. Of which hereafter.

Scotland had beene long peaceable, yet had it often administred motives of discontent and jealousy. IAMES the Fifth, King of Scots, Nephew to HENRY by his Sister, having long liued a Bachelor, HENRY treated with him concerning a marriage with his (then only) Childe the Lady MARY, a Match which probably would have vnited these neighbour Kingdomes. But God had reserved this Vnion for a more happy time.

War with
Scotland.

The antient League betweene France and Scotland had alwaies made the Scots affected to the French, and IAMES prefer the alliance with France, before that of England, where the Dowry was no lesse than the hopes of a Kingdome. So he marrieth with MAGDALEN a Daughter of France; who not long surviving, hee againe matcheth there with MARY of Guise, Widow

1542.

Widow to the Duke of *Longueville*. H E N R Y had yet a desire to see his Nephew, to which end he desired an interview at *Yorke* or some other oportune place. I A M E S would not condescend to this, who could notwithstanding vndertake a long and dangerous voyage into *France*, without invitation. These were the first seeds of discord, which after bladed to the *Scots* destruction. There having been for two yeares neither certaine peace, nor a iust War, yet incursions from each side; Forces are assigned to the Duke of *Norfolke* to repress the insolency of the *Scots*, and secure the Marches. The Scot vpon newes of our being in Armes, sends to expostulate with the Duke of *Norfolke*, concerning the motives of this war, and withall dispatcheth the Lord G O R D O N with some small Forces to defend the Frontiers. The Herauld is detained vntill our Army came to *Berwick*, that hee might not give intelligence of our strength. And in *October* the Duke entring *Scotland*, continued there ransacking the Countrey without any opposition of the Enemy vntill the middle of *November*. By which time King I A M E S having levied a great Army, resolved on a battaile, the Nobility persuaading the contrary, especially vnwilling that hee should any way hazard his Person, the losse of his Father in the like manner being yet fresh in memory, and *Scotland* too sensible of the calamities that ensued it. The King proving obstinate, they detaine him by force, desirous rather to hazard his displeasure, than his life. This tenderneffe of him, in the language of rage and indignation hee termes cowardise and treachery, threatening to set on the Enemy assisted with his Family only.

The Lord M A X W E L L seeking to allay him,
pro-

1542.

promised with ten thousand only to invade *England*, and with far lesse then the *English* Forces to divert the war. The King seemes to consent: But offended with the rest of the Nobility, he gives the Lord O L I V E R S A I N T C L A R E a private Commission not to be opened vntill they were ready to give the onset, wherein hee makes him Generall of the Army. Having in *England* discovered five hundred *English* horse led by Sir T H O M A S W H A R T O N and Sir W I L L I A M M V S G R A V E, the Lord S A I N T C L A R E commanded his Commission publickely to be read, the recitall whereof so distasted the Lord M A X W E L L and the whole Army, that all things were in a confusion, and they ready to disband.

*The Scots
overthrowne.*

The oportunity of an adioining hill gave vs a full prospect into their Army, and invited vs to make vse of our advantages: Wee charge them furiously, the *Scots* amazedly fly, many are slaine, many taken, more plunged in the neighbouring fens, and taken by *Scotish* Freebooters sold to vs. Among the Captives were the Earles of *Glencarne* and *Cassells*, the Lords S A I N T C L A R E, M A X W E L L Admirall of *Scotland*, F L E M I N G, S O M E R W E L L, O L I P H A N T, and G R A Y, besides two hundred of the better sort, and eight hundred common souldiers. The consideration of this overthrow occasioned (as hee conceived) by the froward rashnesse of his owne Subiects; and the death of an *English* Herauld slaine in *Scotland*, so furcharged him with rage and griefe, that hee fell sicke of a Fever, and died in the three and thirtieth yeare of his age, and two and thirtieth of his raigne, leaving his Kingdome to the vusally vnhappy government of a Woman, a Childe scarce eight dayes

*The death of
James the
Fift, King of
Scotland.*

1542.

dayes old. The chiefe of the captives being conveied to the Tower were two dayes after brought before the King's Counsaile, where the Lord Chancellour reprehended their treachery, who without due denunciation of war, invaded and spoiled the territories of their Allies, and committed many outrages, which might excuse any severe courses, which might in iustice be taken with them: Yet his Maiesty out of his naturall Clemency was pleased to deale with them beyond their deserts, by freeing them from the irksomenesse of a strict imprisonment, and disposing of them among the Nobles, to be by them entertained, vntill He should otherwise determine of them.

By this time King JAMES his death had possessed HENRY with new hopes of vniting Britaine vnder one Head. *England* had a Prince, and *Scotland* a Queene, but both so young that many accidents might dissolve a contract before they came to sufficiency. Yet this seeming a course intended by the Divine Providence to extirpate all causes of enmity and discord betweene these neighbouring Nations, a marriage betweene these young Princes is proposed. With what alacrity and applause the proposition was on both sides entertained, wee may conceive, who have had the happinesse to see that effected, which they but intended. Which being a matter of so sweet a consequence, it is to be wondred at, that the conspiracy of a few factious spirits should so easily hinder it. The hope of it prevailed with the King for the liberty of the Captives, conditionally, that they should leave hostages for their returne, if peace were not shortly concluded; which, as also the furtherance of this so wished coniunction, they faithfully promised.

*Hopes of a
match be-
twene
Prince Ed-
ward and
the Queene
of Scots.*

Bb

Anno

1543.

Anno Dom. 1543. Reg. 35.

1543.

*The Scottish
captives set
at liberty.*

*The Earle of
Angus re-
turneth into
Scotland.*

*The league
and match
concluded.*

After their short Captivity, the *Scottish* Lords (having beene detained onely twelve dayes at *London*) on New yeares day began their iourney towards *Scotland*, and with them *ARCHIBALD DOUGLAS* Earle of *Angus*, whom his Sonne in law King *JAMES* had a little before his death intended to recall. Fifteene yeares had hee and his brother *GEORGE* lived exiles in *England*, *HENRY* out of his Royall Bounty allowing to the Earle a pension of a thousand markes, and to his brother of five hundred. The sudaine returne of these captive Lords caused in most as sudaine a ioy. Only the Cardinall of *Saint ANDREWS* (who had by forgery made himselfe Regent) and his faction could willingly have brooked their absence. They came not as freed from a Captivity, but as Embassadours for Peace by them earnestly perswaded, which by the happy coniunction of these Princes might be concluded to perpetuitie. But the Cardinall with his factious Clergy, the Queene Dowager, and as many as were affected to the *Flower de Lys* interposed themselves for the good of *France*. Yet notwithstanding the Cardinals fraud being detected, hee is not only deposed from his Regency, and *JAMES HAMILTON* Earle of *Arrer* substituted, but also committed to custody, whence afterwards making an escape hee was the authour of more garboiles. In the meane time the marriage of the young Queene and other conditions proposed to the Estate of *Scotland* by Sir *RALPH SADLER* the Kings Embassadour, are fully assented vnto, and hostages promised for the performance of them. But the adverse Faction became so prevalent, that the hostages were not delivered at the day, neither did the

Cap-

1543.

Captive Nobility render themselves in *England*. Only GILBERT KENNED A Earle of *Cassels*, like another REGVLVS, had rather commit himselfe to the mercy of his enemies, then prostitute his Honour to the fowle taint of base infidelity. His brethren had become pledges for his returne: the importunity, nay violence of his friends could not deterre him from redeeming them. So to *London* he came, where the bountifull King duly honouring him for his constancy, in steed of receiving a ransom gave him one, dismissing him and his brothers fraught with honour and rewards. The Scots falling off from their late agreement, the King commandeth stay to bee made of all their ships, and confiscateth their goods: sends letters full of threats and iust complaints to the Estates at *Edinburgh*, blaming them for arrogantly reiecting his Alliance, the want whereof must needs be preiudiciall to them; neither had they onely reiected it, but vnmindfull of former benefites had sown seeds of new warre, and forced him to armes. But letters proving ineffectuall, Scotland is by the frontier Garisons invaded in three severall places, forty Scots making resistance are slaine, five and fifty Villages burned, five hundred and sixtie prisoners taken, and a booty brought into *England*, of three thousand five hundred head of cattell, eight hundred horses, and seven thousand sheepe beside great provision of household stufte.

*The Scottish
shipping de-
tained.*

*War with
Scotland.*

*War with
France.*

But this obstinacy of the Scots proceeded not onely from themselves. *France* and *Scotland* were ever combined against *England*, so that to invade one, was to draw on a war with both. Wee had beene often victorious in *France*, wherof many portions anciently belonged to Vs: if we should make any claime to all or part of our Inheritance, *Scotland* would serve either to distract our forces, or to transfer the seat of the war neerer home. The vniting of *England* and *Scotland*

1543.

*A League
with the
Emperour.*

*Landrecy
besieged, but
in vaine.*

*The people
licensed to
eat White
Meates in
Lent.*

would by securing vs at home facilitate our enterprises vpon *France*. These were motives sufficient for *FRANCIS*, notwithstanding the long inviolate amity betweene him and *HENRY*, secretly to crosse our designs in *Scotland*. Whereof *HENRY* could not long be sensible, and not revenge. Wherefore hee proclaimes open hostility with *France*, as he had already with *Scotland*, and reconciles himselfe with the Emperour (before thought irreconciliable in regard of his Aunts disgrace) who professed, that all causes of difference betweene them were buried with her: yet is it certaine that vnto the Pope he accused *HENRY* to have dispatched her by poison. But now they are become Confederates, and an aide of ten thousand *English* sent to ioyne with Imperials. *Landrecy* (a towne lately taken from the Emperour by the *French*) is the first exercise of our Armes. The Emperour alio comming in Person, it is invested with forty thousand men, is furiously battered, and the souldiers brought to the distresse of halfe a provant loafe of bread a day, and to drinke water. *FRANCIS* being certified of their wants assembles his forces, drawes neere the Emperour feeding him with hope of a Battaile, entertaining him with skirmishes relieves the besieged, and without any more adoe vnder the covert of the night retreats.

Let vs now conclude the yeare at home. And to begin with the Church; In *February* the people by Proclamation is licenced to cate White Meates in Lent, but vnder a great penalty enioyned to abstaine from Flesh.

The third of *Iune*, *MOROUGH O'BRIEN* a Nobleman of *Ireland*, descended from the Kings of *Limrick* submitted himselfe to the King, and was shortly after made Earle of *Twomond*, which honour his posteritie at this day enioyeth, having given ample prooffe of their loyalty to succeeding Princes.

The

The twelfth of *Iuly* the King married his sixth Wife the Lady CATHARINE PARR Widow to the Lord LATIMER, and sister of WILLIAM PARR lately created Earle of *Essex* in the right of his Wife sole Daughter and heire to the late Earle HENRY BOURCHIER. At what time another of the same name, Vnckle to the Queene and the Earle, was created Lord *Parr*, and Chamberlaine to the Queene.

The eight and twentieth of *Iuly* for the profession of their Faith were ANTHONY PARSONS, ROBERT TESTWOOD, and HENRY FILMER burned at *London*: MARBECK was also condemned, but afterward pardoned.

Anno Dom. 1544. Reg. 36.

THE Lord THOMAS AUDLEY Chancellour of *England* deceasing the last of *Aprill*, the Lord WRIOTHSLEY chiefe Secretary of Estate is designed his successor. And the Earle of *Hertford* made Lieutenant of the North, is sent thither with an Army to repress the incursions of the Scots.

The Viscount *Lisle* Admirall of *England*, with a Navy of two hundred saile entred the *Forth* of *Scotland*, landed ten thousand men, forced the rich towne of *Leith*, and then marched toward *Edenburgh* the Metropolis of the Kingdome. The Regent was there with the Cardinall (at whose dispose hee now wholly was) and many other Nobles, guarded with six thousand horse and a great number of foote, who vpon sight of an invading Army betooke themselves to flight, and left the City voide of defendants. The Provost craving parley, offered to yeild the city vpon condition of departure with Bag and Baggage, and saving the towne from fire. But the breach of League, and in-

1543.

The Kings
sixt marriage.

William
Parr Earle
of Essex.

Another of
the same
name made
Lord Parr.

1544.

The Lord
Chancellour
dieth.

An expedi-
tion into
Scotland.

1544.

insolencies of the inhabitants of *Leith* and *Edenburg* had inspired vs with revenge, so that no Conditions were to be admitted, but what the Victor should impose. This drives the Provost to a desperate resolution of defence. The *English* give a furious assault, enter at the Canygate, put the inhabitants to the sword, pillage and fire it. The like calamitie felt the Country round about, fire and sword cruelly feeding vpon Villages, Castles, and Noblemens houses. *Leith* had hitherto beene reprimed from the like misery; but at our returne to the Navy, it is made its owne funerall pile, and the Peere of the haven vtterly consumed.

New employments call home our Admirall. HENRY resolves once more to transport his Armes into *France*, there to ioyne with the Earles of *Reux* and *Bures* Imperiall Commanders. It was agreed betweene the Emperour and the King, that the one should invade *Champaigne*, the other *Picardy*, and having vnited their forces (which should amount to fourescore thousand foote, and eightene thousand horse) to march directly to *Paris*, thereby either to force the *French* to fight with disadvantage, or to suffer the ruine of his Countrey. HENRY lands at *Calais*, and finds *Picardy* vnturnished of men, FRANCIS having withdrawne his forces towards *Champaigne* to oppose them against the Emperour. Hee therefore sends the Duke of *Norfolke* with the Earles of *Reux* and *Bures* to beseege *Montrueil*. The Marshall of *Biez* seeing which way we turned the point of our Army, being commanded by his King to have an especiall care of that Territory, puts himselfe into *Montrueil*, and left the Lord of *Vervein* his sonne in law, a man of small experience, to command in *Bouloigne*. This oportunity invites HENRY to incampe before *Boloigne* a towne neere to *Calais*, and many wayes commodious. Hee causeth the Duke of
Norfolk

1544.

(now in danger to be surpris'd by the *French Army*) to arise from before *Montruil*; and omitting his intended voyage to *Paris* (frustrated by the Emperours peace with the *French*, to enter into which HENRY was invited by the Cardinall BELLAY, RAYMOND President of *Rouen*, and AVBESPINE Secretary of Estate, sent of purpose) hee investeth *Boloigne*. The Duke of *Suffolke* had first encamped vpon a hill on the East of *Boloigne*, from whence hee after made his approaches into the valley: And the King encamping on the North, shur vp the towne on all sides. The first assault is given on the Suburbs or Base Towne, which the *French* vnder the covert of a made smoke had forsaken. They pretend it to have beene purposely fired as vnprofitable, and the fire quenched by our industry. Next the Tower of the Ordre (called by vs the Old man) defended by twenty Souldiers is yeilded, and the Towne continually battered in foure places, whereof the most forcible was the battery from the hill on the East side, which beat downe the steeple of our Ladies Church, rent the houses, and scowred the streets of the Towne. The breach made by the Canon being not sufficient, they fall to mining, which happily succeeding, they blow vp a great part of the wall. We give a furious assault, and are repulsd with losse, yet did this assault carry the Towne, that brave Captaine PHILIP CORSE being slaine in it, whose valour alone had hitherto preserved it. VERVEIN vpon the losse of this man, at his wits end, sounds the intention of the King, and yeilds him the Towne vpon composition: That the Souldiers and Citizens might depart with their Baggage; and that all the Artillery, Munition, and Victuals (whereof there was great store) should remaine to the King. The inhabitants refuse this bad composition, and the Mayor with the Townesmen offer to keepe the Towne: which had they accordingly vndertaken, *Boloigne* in all probabilitie had

1544.

continued *French*. For the Capitulation was no sooner concluded (hostages not yet given) but a horrible tempest of winde and raine overthrowes our Tents, and the soile being fat and slippery, wee should not have had any meanes to mount to an assault. Moreover the Daulphin was on march with great forces for their succour, whose approach would have forced HENRY to have changed his designe. But VERVEIN professing that hee would keepe touch even with his Enemy, continued constant in his promise, for which he soone lost his head on a scaffold at *Paris*. The foure and twentieth of *September*, the City was delivered to the Duke of *Suffolke*, and the *French* departed to the number of threescore and seven horse, a thousand five hundred threescore and three able foot, and a thousand nine hundred, twentie and seven women and children, many of the infirmer sort not able to depart, staying behinde. The next day the King entred triumphantly, and caused our Ladies Church to be demolished, and in place thereof a Fortification to be raised, and having ordered his affaires to his minde, making the Viscount *Lisle* Governour, set saile for *Dover*, where hee arrived on the first of *October*.

But the King's hasty departure permitted not all things to be sufficiently sealed. Part of the Artillery, Victuals and Munition by the Capitulation left in *Boloigne*, were not removed from the Base Towne, which was fortified only with some small trenches: for the surprisall whereof, the Daulphin in the night sends some troupes, who before morning enter the place, cut all in pieces they meet, win the Artillery and Munition, and thinke to have gotten an absolute victory: but being intent to pillage, some Ensignes issue from the higher Towne, finde them in disorder, set vpon them and rout them. Many of the Enemies were

were flaine, among whom was FOY QYESSOLLES, another sonne in law of BIEZ, the victory not being without bloud on our side.

Neither was our Fleete idle in the meane, which scowring the seas brought three hundred Prises so fraught with Merchandise, that the three spacious Churches of the *Augustine*, the *Gray*, and the *Blacke Friers* in *London*, whose Monasteries had lately beene suppressed, were stored with nothing but hogheads of wine.

The Earle of *Lenox* lately dispatched out of *France* for the managing of the affaires of *Scotland*, to the behoofe of the *French* found not entertainment there according to his expectation. The Queene Mother and Cardinall, as long as they had need of him, deluded him with hopes of marrying the Queene Mother, and by their secret calumnies rendred him suspected to the *French*. At length finding his safety questionable, he flies for refuge into *England*, accompanied with ALEXANDER sonne and heire to the Earle of *Glencarne*, WALTER GRAHAM brother to the Earle of *Montrosse*, and Sir JOHN BORTHWICKE with others, and were honourably received by HENRY, who most happily repaired the Earles losses of revenues in *France* fallen by the death of ROBERT STUART of *Aubigny*, and of his marriage in *Scotland*, with that most successfull Match with that beautifull Lady MARGARET Neipce to the King, and Daughter to the Earle of *Angus*, and an annuall pension of seven hundred markes. And once more he resolved to try his fortune in *Scotland* attended by Sir RICE MANSELL, and Sir PETER MEWTAS, WINTOR, AVDLEY, and BROOKES with others, who with eight ships set saile from *Bristol*, and hanging over the coast of *Scotland* like a cloud vncertaine whereto disburthen it selfe, deter-

1545.

red the *Scots* from enterprising any thing vpon *England* in the absence of the King.

The Church of late had daily felt some change or other. And this yeare in *Iune* the *Letany* set forth in *English* was commanded to be vsed in all Churches.

Anno Dom. 1545. Reg. 37.

1545.

OUr late Expeditions had without doubt beene very chargeable. So that I should not wonder that the King began to want supplies, if I did not consider the incredible summes raised of the spoiles of the late suppressed Religious Houses: All which notwithstanding, whether it were that God not pleased with this authorized sacriledge did not enlarge them with his blessing, *which onely* (saith *SALOMON*) *maketh rich*: or that a great part thereof was otherwise divided either among his Courtiers, or for the maintenance of the eiectioned religious persons; the Treasury was certainly very bare. To which former reasons wee may adde the six new erected Bishopricks, and the like number of Cathedrall Churches, as also the stipends conferred on both Vniuersities for the publique Professors of the *Hebrew & Greeke* tongues, Divinity, Law, and Physicke, to each whereof he allotted an annuity of forty pounds. Howsoever it were, certaine it is, that levies being made in *Germany* for the King, the souldiers disbanded for want of pay. The Parliament had alreadie granted him great Subsidies, so that thence hee could expect no more. Yet moneyes must be had. *HENRY* therefore resolves on an honest kind of rapine. The Intreaties of Princes little differ from Commands, vnlesse perhaps in this, that they worke more subtilly, and render them pliable

1545.

ble with whom Commands would not have prevailed: Which manifestly appeared in the execution of this proiect. He had twenty yeares since commanded money by Proclamation, a course so far from taking as was desired, that it had like to have beene the cause of much mischief: but now by some fit Commissioners informing his subiects of his necessities, and desiring the richer sort one by one to contribute towards his support, hee quickly replenished the Exchequer. The Commissioners begin first with the Citizens of *London*, among whom two were more straight laced then the rest, *viz.* RICHARD READ and WILLIAM ROCH: but their parsimony shall cost them deare. For READ being an old man and vtterly vnexpert of Martiall Discipline is commanded to serve in person in the wars of *Scotland*, is taken by the *Scots*, and forced to ransom himselfe at a high rate. ROCH, as having vsed some vncivill language before those of his Maiesties Counsaile who sate Commissioners, was for some moneths punished with straight imprisonment, and at length (not improbably) bought his libertie.

In the meane time *Boloigne* was a great eyesore to the *French*. They try to regaine it by stratagems and surprisals, but in vaine. They betake themselves to force with the like successe. The Marshall of *Biez* Governour of *Boloignois* comes with a great Army to the *Port*, a Towne two miles from *Boloigne*, and begins to build a Fort on this side the river vpon the point of the Tower of *Ordre*, but is by the Earle of *Hertford* forced away, and leaves his Castle in the Airc. His intent was by this Fort to have kept the garrison of *Boloigne* within their wals, to have commanded the haven, so to cut off all succours by sea, and from *Calais* by land. Which being done, FRANCIS resolved in Person to besiege *Guisnes*, and there to

1545.

fortifie, thereby to famish *Boloigne*, and to keepe *Calais* and the land of *Oye* in subiection. But these designs proving fruitlesse, he prepares his navall forces, giving forth, that he intended to invade *England*, hoping that this alarme would have made vs have a care of the maine, and neglect those pieces abroad, so that *Boloigne* for lack of aide should easily be reduced. The noise of an invasion made *HENRY* arme, who having gathered together a sufficient Fleet, awaited the Enemy at *Portsmouth*, intent to all occasions. Neither did the *French* onely intend an alarme, landing in three severall places in *England*, but were every where with losse driven aboard their ships. Two dayes after they fall downe to the Channell that divideth the Isle of *Wight* from the rest of *Britaine*; they seeme to threaten *Portsmouth*, where the King then was, and seeke to draw our Fleet to fight. The *French*, beside a sufficient Fleet of other ships had twenty five Gallies, no way probably vselfull in these tempestuous and rough seas not brooking this flat kinde of shipping, but by their bulke and number to terrifie vs: yet at this time an vnusuall calmnesse of the sea without winde or current, put them in hope of effecting wonders by their Galleyes. But our Fleet was not to be drawne to fight, much lesse to bee forced without apparent danger to the Enemy, who must slip downe a narrow Channell, where but few ships could go in front, and the like number opposed might easily defend it: where they could not enter, but with the tide and winde, and the first ships repulsed, in their falling backe would have disordered the rest of the Fleet: where of necessitie they must fight vnder the favour of our Forts and Cannon, which would easily have hindred their approach. The Enemy being put off heere, consult of fortifying the Isle of *Wight*, where at *Saint Helens* point they land two thousand men, resolve

1545.

solve forsooth to make that the seate of the warre, and there to build three Forts, but the valour of the inhabitants made them change their designe, and forced them againe to their ships. Thus every where affronted to their losse, without any memorable act they set saile for *Normandie*. The *French Fleet* consisted of a hundred and three saile of all sorts, ours of only fixtie, so that it was no way safe for vs to incounter them. Some light proffers were made on both sides, wherein we alwayes came of with the better. As for the *Mary Rose*, a ship which with her losse buried Sir GEORGE CAROW the Captaine, and seven hundred men; the *French* do well to make vse of casualties to their owne glory: But it was not the valour of the *French* or fury of their Cannons that sunke her, but the supine negligence of the Mariners, being wracked in the very haven in the presence of the King.

Boloigne was not idle the while. Vpon hope of a Fort to be built by the Marshall of *Biez*, FRANCIS had made great preparations for an enterprize vpon *Guisnes*. but was diverted by the death of the Duke of *Orleans* his younger Sonne, and the lost hopes of his intended Fort neere *Boloigne*, and having for a while encamped at * *Mont-Lambert*, retired at last toward *Amiens*. The neernesse of the Kings Campe at *Mont-Lambert* did daily invite both Nations to make triall of their valour, the *English* sometimes, sometimes the *French* having the better. One day among the rest the *English* hotly charging the *French*, the Duke of *Aumale* comes to relieve them, who being strooken with a Lance vnder his right eye, it breakes in pieces and leaves the tronchion halfe a foot within his head. It was a token of an excellent spirit in this young Nobleman, that for so rough a charge hee lost not his stirrups, and endured the torture whereto they put him in drawing out the three square head, with such

an

* *Alias Bon-lamberg.*

1545.

an invincible constancy, as if they had picked a thorne from out his finger, and beyond all expectation of the Chirurgians recovered. The victory remained to the *English*. Who could not long bragge of it, afterward seeking to cut off a Convoy of the Enemies defeated by the *Ringrave* with the losse of fixteene Captaines, and seven or eight hundred men. The Earle of *Surrey*, who led them, saved himselfe by flight. And were it not discourtesie in vs not to requite the late visit of the *French*? The Lord Admirall therefore landed six thousand men at *Treport* in *Normandie*, burned the Towne and Abbey with thirtie Ships and a Barke in the Haven, and returned with the losse of only fourteene men.

Neither were our employments lesse or fewer in *Scotland*, then among the *French*. *Scotland* had so many enemies at home, that it needed not any abroad. But their homebred dissentions had caused war from vs, and the way to set them at peace was, to invade them. In the beginning of *March* Sir RALPH EVERS, by the death of his Father Lord Evers, with an Army entred *Scotland*, making all the Countrey desert about *Iedbury* and *Kelson*. Thence marching to *Coldingham* fortified the Church and Tower, and leauing a Garrison there, departed. The Garrison partly out of couetousnesse, partly to distresse the Enemy if he should lay siege to them, pillaged and wasted all the neighbouring Countrey. The Regent according to their expectation besiegeth the Church with eight thousand men, and batters it a whole day and a night. But sudainly, making none of the Nobles partakers of his determinations, whether out of feare to be betraied by his Army, or some other cause, tooke horse and passed away to *Dunbar*, which occasioned the disbanding of the Army, and the freedom of the besieged. Our often successe hauing emboldened

1545.

boldened vs, we adventure vpon another impression, the fury whercof disburdened it selfe in *Merch*, *Teisidale*, and *Lauden*, the Inhabitants being either forced to yeild, or fly, and leave their goods to be seized on by *Bellonas* Harbingers. The *Scots* at length make head, and although of more then equall number, they betake themselves to stratagems. They vnderstand by their Scouts of our approach: and to deccive vs, by the advise of *WALTER SCOT* send their horses to the adioyning hills. Neither indeed was the place so advantageous for Horse, as for Foot. The horses backed by the Groomes that kept them, did from the hills make shew of an Army, and that flying. We advance, as loath to let our enemies escape, in the pursuit of whom we vnawares fall among the whole Army not disorderly flying, but prepared to receive vs. It is not vnusuall to encounter men: but if Heaven and the Elements oppose vs, how can we hope for victory? Wee finde the number of our aduersc Army great beyond our expectation, the Sun farre declining to the West darted his rayes in our faces, and a violent winde drives the smoke of the shot into our mouthes, which not onely made the most necessary sence vnusefull, but with a foule stench corrupted the aire, and hindered the breathing of the already panting Souldiers. The many advantages give them the victory. Wee leave two hundred in the place, and among them the Lord *EVERS*; a thousand are taken, whereof Alderman *READ* was one.

A little after this victory, *FRANCIS* sent into *Scotland* a supply of five hundred *French* Horse and three thousand Footmen vnder the command of the Lord of *Lorges* Earle of *Montgomery*, not so much to crosse our attempts against the *Scots*, as to distract our forces, that the violence of them vnited might not at once fall on *France*.

This

1546.

This yeare among other accidents is alio memorable through the death of the King's Brother in law CHARLES BRANDON Duke of *Suffolke*, a man of a mighty spirit, yet so tempering it with mildnesse and faire demeanour, that hee was generally beloved both of Prince and people: Who in that height of favour carried him so evenly as to die quietly in his bed. A happinesse vnder this Prince rare even to Fortunes and His Favourites.

A Parliament assembled in *November* granted the King the Disposall of all Colledges, Chantries, and Hospitals, the demeasnes, salaries and stipends there-to belonging, or given to Priests to say Masse for the soules of the departed. The King personally gave thanks to both Houses, promising to have a care that they should be imployed to the honour of God and the publique good. But we finde not the effect of his promises.

Anno Dom. 1546. Reg. 38.

& ultimo.

WE are now come to the last yeare of HENRY his Raigne. Who having tired himselfe with the *French* wars, began at length seriously to bethinke himselfe of peace. Neither was FRANCIS lesse desirous of his friendship. To this end Deputies from both sides meet often betweene *Guisnes* and *Ardres*: For HENRY, the Earle of *Hertford*, GARDINER Bishop of *Winchester*, the Viscount *Lisle* Lord Admirall, Sir WILLIAM PAGET Secretary of Estate, and Doctour WOTTON the first Deane of *Canterbury*: For FRANCIS, the Admirall ANNEBAULT, RAYMOND first President of *Rouan*,

1546.

Rouan, and BOYCHEREL Secretary. After many consultations a Peace was concluded on these Conditions:

That Francis within eight yeares should pay fourescore hundred thousand Crownes to the King, as well for the arrerage of his Pension, as for many other expenses made by him in war, in the fortification of Boloigne and of the Countrey: and vpon receipt of the said summe, Henry should deliver vnto the King of France Boloigne and all the Countrey belonging to it, with the ancient places or newly edified by him, Mont-Lambert, the Tower of Ordre, Ambleteul and others, with all the Artillery and Munition in them.

For the confirmation whereof, the Viscount Lisle was sent Embassadour into France, and from thence came the Admirall ANNEBAULT to receive the oathes of each King, and the Peace was proclaimed in London.

On the sixteenth of Iuly were burnt at London for their Religion IOHN LASSELS, NICHOLAS OTTERDEN, IOHN ADLAM, and ANNE ASKEW, a young Gentlewoman aged twentie five, of an ancient Descent, excellent beauty, and acute wit, whose examinations, writings, tortures, and patient suffering are at large set downe by Master Fox, being before their execution by Doctour SCHAXTON exhorted to recant, as he then was forced, who some yeares passed had resigned his Bishopricke to enioy his Conscience.

And here I may not omit an addition to the sep-

D d

tenary

1546.

tenary number of Sleepers WILLIAM FOXLEY a Potmaker in *London*, who without any touch of any preceding infirmity was seised with such a dead sleepe, that for fourteene daies and fifteene nights no force nor invention could awake him; on the fifteenth day this miraculous sleepe forsaking him, he was as it were restored to life, and found as sound and entire as if he had taken no more then an ordinary repose: Neither would he believe that he had taken other, but that the building of a certaine wall made it apparant to him how much time he had slept away. Hee lived above forty yeares after, viz. to the yeare 1587.

Let vs conclude this yeare with the death of MARTIN LUTHER that famous impugner of the Church of *Rome*, who being sent for by the Counts of MANSFIELD to compose some differences betwene them concerning their inheritance, died among them in his Climactericall yeare, and after much contention for his body, lieth buried at *Wittenberg*.

Anno Dom. 1547.

HENRY long since growne corpulent was become a burthen to himselfe, and of late lame by reason of a violent vlcer in his leg, the inflammation whereof cast him into a lingering fever, which by little and little decaying his spirits, hee at length began to feeble the inevitable necessity of death. The cogitation of many things (as in the like exigents vsually happeneth) oppressed him, and chiefly of his Sonnes nonage, but now entring into his tenth yeare, an age infirme and oportune to treacheries, against which he found small provision in his friends, having none

1547.

none amongst those on whose loyalty hee chiefly relied, of so sufficient eminency, as to vnderprop his weake Estate with those supporters of Royalty, *Power* and *Authoritie*. His Brother in law the Duke of *Sussex* was lately deceased: *SEIMOUR* the yong Princes Vnkle was a man whose Goodnesse was not tempered with Severity, and being descended of a Family more ancient then noble (as having vntill now never transcended Knighthood) would be subiect to contempt. They who more neerly participated of the Bloud Royall, as they any way excelled in Power or Vertue, were the more suspected and hated by him. The Family of the *HOWARDS* was then most flourishing, the chiefe whereof was *THOMAS* Duke of *Norfolke*, a man famous for his exploits in *France*, *Scotland*, and elsewhere, long exercised in the schoole of Experience, many wayes deriving himselfe from the Crowne, popular, of great command and revenues. But the edge of the old mans disposition made milde and blunted with age, administred the lesse cause of suspition. Of his eldest Sonne *HENRY* Earle of *Surrey*, the King was certainly iealous, and resolved to cut him off. Hee had lately in the wars of *France* manifested himselfe heire to the glory of his Ancestors, was of a ripe wit, and endued with great learning, so that the Elogy afterwards given to his sonne *HENRY*, that *hee was the Learnedst among the Nobility, and the Noblest among the Learned*, might have as fitly beene applied to him, was very gracious with the people, expert in the Art Military, and esteemed fit for publique Government. These great Vertues were too great Faults, and for them hee must suffer. Treason is objected to him, and vpon the surmise hee and his Father sent to the Tower. On the thirteenth of *January* he is arraigned, the chiefe point of his accusation whereon they insisted being, for bearing

1547.

certaine Armes, which only belonged to the King, and consequently aspiring to the Crowne. Of other things hee easily acquitted himselfe, and as for those Armes, he constantly affirmed that they hereditarily pertained vnto him: yet notwithstanding hee would not have presumed to have borne them, but being warranted by the opinion of the Heralds, who onely were to give iudgement in these cases. The Iudges not approving of his answer condemne him, and so the Flower of the *English* Nobilitie is on the nineteenth of *Ianuary* beheaded, the King lying in extremity, and breathing his last in Bloud. The Duke was adiudged to perpetuall imprisonment, where he continued vntill he was by *Queene MARY* set at libertie.

The King, his disease growing on him, at last makes his Will, wherein (by vertue of a Law lately enacted) hee ordaines Prince *EDWARD* his Successour in the first place, and in the second (Prince *EDWARD* dying issuelesse) substitutes the Lady *MARY* begotten of *CATHARINE* of *Arragon*, and vpon the like defect of issue in *MARY* in the third place substitutes the Lady *ELIZABETH*. These three reigned successiuelly, and accomplished the number of fiftie six yeares, at the expiration whereof *Queene ELIZABETH* ended her long glorious Raigne, and left the Diadem to King *JAMES*, in the many regards of his Learning, Religion, Goodnesse, peaceable and happy Raigne the Mirrour of late ages. The next care was of his Executors, whom hee also appointed (Tutors shall I say or) Counsaillours to his Sonne, and were in number sixteene, viz.

Thomas *Archbishop* of *Canterbury*.

Thomas *Wriothesley* *Lord Chancellor*.

William Pawlet *Lord Saint-Iohn*.

John

1547.

John Russell *Lord Privy Seale.*Edward Seimour *Earle of Hertford.*John Dudley *Viscount Lisle, Lord Ad-
Admirall.*Cuthbert Tonstall *Bishop of Duresme.*Sir Anthony Browne *Master of the
Horse.*Sir Edmond Mountague *Chiefe Iustice
of the Common Pleas.*

Sir William Paget.

Sir William Harbert.

Sir Thomas Bromley.

Sir Anthony Denny.

Sir Edward North.

Sir Edward Wotton.

Doctor Wotton *Deane of Canterbury
and Yorke.*To whom hee added as Assistants, especially in
matters of great consequence.Henry *Earle of Arundell.*William *Earle of Essex.*Sir Thomas Cheyney *Steward of the
Kings Household.*Sir John Gage *Comptroller.*Sir Anthony Wingfield *Vice-chamber-
laine.*Sir William Peter *Secretarie.*

Sir Richard Rich.

Sir

1547.

Sir Iohn Baker.

Sir Ralph Sadler.

Sir Thomas Seimour.

Sir Richard Southwell.

Sir Edmond Pecham.

He ordained his body should be interred at *Windfore* in a Monument (yet imperfect) erected by Cardinall *WOLSEY*, not for himselfe (as many falsly surmise) but for the King, as by the Inscription is manifest, which cannot be of later date. For therein *HENRY* is stiled Lord of *Irland* without any mention of Supreme Head of the Church, which two particles it is manifest were changed in the Title after *WOLSEY* his death. In the same his last Will he commanded that the Monuments of *HENRY* the Sixt, and *EDWARD* the Fourth (both interred in *Windfore*) should be made more magnificent and stately, and other things of lesse moment, most of which were neglected. This last Will and Testament hee confirmed, subscribed, and sealed the last of *December*, and survived a moneth after, dying at *Westminster* the eight and twentieth of *Ianuary*, and that in this manner: The King having long languished, the Physicians finding apparant symptomes of approaching death, wished some of his friends to admonish him of his estate, which at last Sir *ANTHONY DENNY* vndertooke, who going directly to the fainting King, told in few (but those plaine) words, That the hope of humane helpe was vaine, wherefore he beseeched his Maiestie to erect his thoughts to Heaven, and be-thinking him of his forepassed life, through *Christ* to implore Gods Mercy. An advise not very acceptable to him. But finding it grounded vpon the iudgement of the Physicians, hee submitted himselfe to the hard law of necessitie, and reflecting vpon the course of his

1547.

his Life (which hee much condemned) he professed himselfe confident, that through *Christ* his infinite Goodnesse all his finnes, although they had beene more in number and waight, might bee pardoned. Being then demanded whether he desired to confer with any Divines, *With no other (saith he) but the Archbishop CRANMER, and not with him as yet; I will first repose my selfe a little, and as I then finde my selfe will determine accordingly.* After the sleepe of an houre or two finding himselfe fainting, hee commanded the Archbishop (then at *Croyden*) should be sent for in all hast. Who vsing all possible speed came not vntill the King was speechlesse. As soone as he came, the King tooke him by the hand, the Archbishop exhorting him to place all his hope in Gods Mercies through *Christ*, and beseeching him, that if hee could not in words, he would by some signe or other testifie this his Hope: Who then wringed the Archbishops hand as hard as he could, and shortly after expired, having lived fiftie five yeares and seven moneths, and thereof reigned thirty seven yeares nine monethes and six dayes.

Thus ended HENRY the Eighth his Life and Raigne, which for the first yeares of his Government was like NERO's Five yeares, Admirable: for often Victories and happy Success in war, Glorious: for the many Changes vnder it, Memorable: For the Foundation of the Churches Reformation, Laudable: to Queenes, most vnhappy: for the Death of so many (for the most) great Personages, Bloudy: and for the frequent Exactions and Subsidies, and Sacrilegious Spoile of the Church, much Preiudiciall to the Estate, Grievous and Burthenfome to the Subject.

FINIS.

1547.

his life (which he much coveted) he presented himselfe content, that though he left his innocent conscience all his sinnes, although they had bene more in number and weight, might be pardoned. Being then demanded whether he desired to confer with any Divines, he answered (that he) but the Archbishop Crammer, and not with him as yet; I will first repose my selfe a while, and all this while my selfe will be content accordingly. After the space of an hour or two finding himselfe fainting, he commanded the Archbishop (that as Crammer) should be sent for in all haste. Who doing all possible speed came not until the King was speechlesse. As soon as he came the King took him by the hand, the Archbishop exhorted him to place all his hope in Gods Mercies through Christ, and beseeching him that he could not in words, he would by some signe or other testify his hope: Who then wringed the Archbishops hand as hard as he could, and shortly after expired, having lived little five years and seven months, and thereof reigned thirty seven years nine months and six days.

Thus ended Henry the Eighth his life and Reigne, which for the last years of his Government was like Nero's five years, Admirable: for often Victories and happy success in war, Glorious: for the many Changes under it, Memorable: for the Foundation of the Churches Reformation, Laudable: to Queenes, most unhappy: for the Death of so many (for the most) great Personages, Bloody: and for the frequent Executions and Subsidies, and sacrilegious spoils of the Church, much Prejudiciall to the Estate, Grievous and burthensome to the Subject.

1547.



ANNALES OF ENGLAND.

The second Booke.

EDWARD the Sixt.

Anno Dom. 1547. Reg. 1.



Oyalty like a Pythagorean Soule transmigrates. Although HENRY were dead, the King was still alive, and survived in the person of young EDWARD, who began his Raigne the eight and twentieth of *Ianuary*, then in the tenth yeare of his age; and having beene on the last of the same moneth proclaimed King, came the same day from *Enfield* (where the Court had then beene) to the Tower, there

Ee 2

accor.

1547.

1547.

The Earle of
Hertford
Protector.

King Hen-
ry's Fun-
erals.

The Coro-
nation.

according to the ancient custome of our Kings to abide vntill his Inauguration at *Westminster*. The next day the Counsaile assembled for the managing of the Estate, conferred on the Kings Vnckle, EDWARD SEIMOUR Earle of *Hertford* the honour and power of Protector of the King's Person and Kingdome. Who to season his new Dignitie with some memorable act, on the sixt of *February*, dubbed the King Knight, the King presently imparting the same Honour to RICHARD HOBLETHORNE Lord Maior of *London*.

On the fifteenth of *February* King HENRY his Funerals were solemnized, and his Body Royally interred in the middle of the Quire in the Church at *Windsore*.

Two daies after were some of the Nobilitie dignified with greater Honours, some new created. The Lord Protector Earle of *Hertford*, was made Duke of *Somerset*: WILLIAM PARR Earle of *Essex*, Marquis of *Northampton*: JOHN DUDLEY Viscount *Lisle*, Earle of *Warwicke*: and the Lord Chancellour WRIOTHSEY, Earle of *Southampton*. Sir THOMAS SEIMOUR brother to the Protector and Lord Admirall, Sir THOMAS RICH, Sir WILLIAM WILLOUGHBY, and Sir EDMOND SHEFFIELD were inrolled among the Barons. Other two daies being fled after their Predecessours, the King passed triumphantly from the Tower through *London* to *Westminster*, where he was solemnely crowned, anointed, and inaugurated by CRANMER Archbishop of *Canterbury*. At what time also with incredible indulgence pardon of all crimes whatsoever was publicquely proclaimed and granted to all persons throughout the Realme, six only being exempted from the benefit thereof, namely, the Duke of *Norfolke*, Cardinall POOLE, the lately beheaded Marquis

1547.

Marquis of *Excester* his eldest Sonne, one THROCMORTON, FORTESCUE, and RICHARD PATE late Bishop of *Worcester*, who least hee should be constrained to acknowledge the King Head of the Church, had some yeares passed fled to *Rome*.

On the nineteenth of *June* in the Cathedrall Church of Saint PAUL in *London* were celebrated the Exequies of FRANCIS King of *France*. He deceased the two and twentieth of the precedent *March*, having beene after the death of our HENRY much disposed to melancholy, whether for that hee failed in the hope of strengthening their late contracted amity with some stricter tie: or that being some few yeares the younger, hee was by his death admonished of the like approaching fate. They were also of so conspiring a similitude of disposition and nature, that you shall hardly finde the like betweene any two Princes of what ever different times. This bred a mutuall affection in them, and as it were forcibly nourished the secret fire thereof betweene them, vnlesse peradventure when emulation or the respect of publique vtilitie swaied them the contrary way, so that the death of the one could not but much grieve the survivor. He therefore in the Cathedrall at *Paris* celebrated the Funerals of HENRY, though excommunicated by the Pope. He also left one only Sonne named HENRY inheritor of his Crowne, whose Raigne lasted but to the beginning of Queene ELIZABETH.

*The death of
Francis
King of
France.*

And now the affaires of *Scotland*, which have without doubt beene great and memorable, crave a part in our History. Wee have before made mention of our League with *Scotland*, wherein it was determined concerning the marriage betweene the now King EDWARD and the Queene of *Scots*. The times since then were full of continuall iarres. Wee at length resolved

1547.

solved not to dally with them, but to vndertake the war with forces agreable to the cause. The Duke of *Somerset* by consent of the Privie Counsaile is sent into *Scotland* with ten thousand Foot and six thousand Horse (beside pioners and artificers thirteene hundred) and fifteene peece of brasse Ordnance. To the Lord *CLINTON* is assigned a Navy consisting of foure and twenty men of war, one Galley, and thirty Ships of burthen, wherewith hec was to scowre the Seas, and infest the maritime parts of *Scotland*. On the third of *September* the Duke of *Somerset* made an hostile entrance vpon the Enemies Countrey, and forthwith dispatched letters to the Earle of *Arren*, Regent of *Scotland*, much to this effect: *That he wished the Scots would consider, that this war was waged among Christians, & that our ends were no other then a iust Peace, whereto the ende vours of all good men should tend. An occasion not only of a League, but of a perpetuall Peace was now happily offred, if they would suffer the two differing and emulous Nations by vniting the Head to grow together. This as it had beene formerly sought by vs, so had it beene generally assented to by the Estates of Scotland. Therefore he could not but wonder why they should rather treacherously recurre to Armes (the events of war being vsually even to the Victor sufficiently vnfortunate) then maintaine in violate their troth plighted to the good of both Nations. They could not in reason expect that their Queene should perpetually live a Virgin life. And if shee married, where could shee bestow her selfe better, then on a puissant Monarch inhabiting the same Island, and parlying the same language? They saw what inconueniences were the consequents of foraine matches, whereof they should rather make triall by the examples of others, then at their owne perill. He demanded nothing but equity; yet he so much abhorred the effusion of Christian bloud, that if hee found the Scots not vtterly averse from an accord, hee would endeavour that*
some

1547.

some of the Conventions should be remitted: he would also permit that the Queene should abide and be brought vp among them vntill her age made her marriageable, at what time she should by consent of the Estates her selfe make choice of a Husband. In the meane time there should be a Cessation of Armes, neither should the Queene be transported out of her Realme, nor entertaine treatise of marriage with the French or any other forainer. This if they would faithfully promise, he would forthwith peaceably depart out of Scotland; and whatsoeuer damages the Countrey had suffered by this invasion, he would according to the esteeme of indifferent Arbitrators make ample satisfaction. The Scottish Army consisted of thirty thousand Foot, some speake a greater number. The chiefe Commanders whereof puffed vp with confidence of their strength (although they had lately lost eight hundred in a tumultuary skirmish) and misconceiving our offers to proceed out of feare, reiect all Conditions of Accord; and least vpon knowledge of the equitie of our demands, the Counsaile should encline to resolutions of peace, they conceale our letters. And not only so, but vpon assurance of victory spred a rumor, that nothing would content the insolent *English*, but the delivery of the Queene, which if they could not otherwise, they would by force obtaine, and proceed to the absolute conquest of the Kingdome. This report enraged the Souldiers, whom no motives could disuade from present ingaging themselves in battaile. The wiser sort were not ignorant of the necessities that long since began to presse vs, who were brought to that passe, that by reason of the difficulties of passages we could not make a safe retreat, nor force the Enemie to fight in regard of the strength of the place where he was incamped. But the vaine hope of victorie had possessed the mindes of the greater part, and excluded reason. Necessitie forced vs to a resolution brave and

Mussel-
burgh Feild

1547.

and expedient, which was, to seeke the Enemy in his lodging, and endeavour to draw him to combat. But the hot-spurre Scots issuing from out their fastnesses, seemed willing to prevent vs. So both Armies entertaine a mutuall resolution. A little before the ioyning of the Armies an accident happened, which did not a little make way to our victory. The Enemy marching along neere the sea shore, a piece of Ordnance discharged from our Gally tooke away five and twentie of their men, whereof the eldest sonne of the Lord GRIMES was one. Foure thousand Archers terrified with so vnexpected a slaughter made astand, & could never after be brought on. The two armies approaching each other, the Duke of Somerset commanded the Lord GRAY with the Cavallery to charge the Scots, and find them employment vntill the Infantry had seized on an adioyning hill, and if hee could without much hazard, to disorder the Enemy. But they were gallantly received by a strong Squadron of Pikes, whereon some of the formost having too far ingaged themselues were cast away, the rest retreated affirming, that it was as easie to force a wall, as through the *Scottish* rankes. The Duke makes a second triall by the light Horse seconding them with the Ordnance and the Archers. The Enemy either not able to stand so violent a charge, or (as some relate) to draw vs from the favour of our Canon, begins to giue ground, which we perceiving give a shout, crying out withall, *They fly, they fly*; which so amazed them, that some began to fly indeed, and at length the whole Army was routed. The Scots complaine, that we tyrannized over the Captives, especially the Priests and Friers (whereof many served in this Feild) because by their instigation chiefly our Conditions were so arrogantly reiected. Of the Enemies were slaine thirteene thousand, and among them (beside the Earle of Lo-

1547.

Lohemor and the Lord FLEMING, the chiefe of the *Scottish* Gentry, with their Tenants, who thought it a disgrace to survive their Lords. In the chase were taken fifteene hundred, among whome were the Earle HUNTLEY Chancellour of *Scotland*, the Lords HESTER, HOBBEY, and HAMILTON, beside many other persons of Quality. This lamentable overthrow was given the tenth of September.

The *English* become Victors beyond their expectation, ransacked the Countrey five miles about, fortified in the Forth the forsaken Islands *Kesh* and *Haymon*, tooke *Broctb* Castle, by their terrour forced the Garrisons of *Humes* and *Fastcastle* to yeeld, and having built a Fort at *Lauder*, and repaired the ruines of *Roxburgh*, by their departure recreated the dejected mindes of the distressed *Scots*.

Our affaires thus succeeding abroad, the Church at home had her changes. Many of the Counsaile, but especially the Protector, much endeavoured Reformation in point of Religion. The rest, who were addicted to the Doctrine of *Rome*, could for private respects temporize, fearing indeed restitution of Church goods (wherein each of them shared) vnles an irreconcilable breach were made with that Sea. So that whiles some eagerly oppose Popery, and others coldly defend it, not onely what had beene enacted by HENRY the Eighth concerning the abrogation of the Popes authority is confirmed, but many other things are added, whereby our Church was so purged from the dregs of Superstition, that for Purity of Doctrine, and Institution of select Ecclesiasticall Rites, it excelled the most Reformed Churches of *Germany*. All Images are pulled downe, Priests are permitted to marry, the *Liturgy* set forth in the *English* Tongue, the *Eucharist* admini-

Reformati-
on in the
Church.

1547.

sted vnder both kindes, *Auricular Confession* forbidden, no man prohibited the reading of the Scriptures, no *Masses* to be said for the Soules of the departed, and many other things ordained, so far differing from the Institution of our Forefathers, that it administred matter to the common people (who are wont to iudge not according to *Reason*, but *Custom*) of breaking out into Rebellion. And it is somewhat remarkable, that the same day wherein the Images, wherof the Churches were dispossessed, were publicquely burned at *London*, we obtained that memorable victory over the Scots at *Musselburgh*.

This yeare at Archbishop CRANMER his invitation came into *England* PETER MARTYR a *Florentine*, MARTIN BUCER of *Selestadt*, and PAVLVS PHAGIVS borne in the *Palatinate*: who being very courteously received by the King and Nobles, having reposed themselves some while at *Canterbury*, were sent, MARTYR to *Oxford*, BUCER and PHAGIVS to *Cambridge*, there publicquely to read *Divinity*: but PHAGIVS having scarce saluted the *Vniversity*, deceased of a *Quartane Ague* the twelke of *November* in the five and fortieth yeare of his age. Neither did BUCER long survive him, who died at *Cambridge* the last of *February* 1551, being then threescore yeares old. MARTYR shortly after his comming to *Oxford*, maintained publicquely in the Schooles, and that with solid arguments, against TRESHAM and CHEDSEY Opponents, that the *Popish Transubstantiation* was but a meere fiction; which Disputation he after published and enlarged.

Anno

1548.

Anno Dom. 1548. Reg. 2.

THe *English* having this yeare fortified and put a strong Garrison into *Hadinton* a Towne seated in the most fertile soile of all *Scotland*, did from thence and *Lauder* make often inrodes vpon the bordering Countrey, burning and spoiling whatsoever might be vifull to the Enemy, from whome they expected a siege. In the meane time had the *French* sent six thousand (ten thousand say we) men into *Scotland*, wherof three thousand were *Lansquenets* led by the *Reingrave*. The Lord of *Essé* a man of tried valor, famous in the siege of *Landrecy* and other expeditions was chief of the Army. These adveturers lading at *Dunbar*, march speedily for *Hadinton*, & ioining with the *Scottish* Forces consisting of eight thousand men, straightly besiege it. At the Abbey neere the Towne they call a Counsaile, treat of transporting the Queene into *France*, and marrying her to the Daulphin. They whome the respect of private ends had not corrupted and withdrawn from the care of the publique weale, objected, *That they should so draw on them a perpetuall war from England, and betray themselves to the slavery of the French: That the propositions made by the English were reasonable, who offered a ten yeares Truce, and sought not to intrap the Scot in any bands or preiudiciall compacts, their demands being none other then this, That if within the ten yeares either the King of England, or the Queene of Scots should decease, all things should on each side remaine entire and in their former estate: Delay had often in the like cases proved advantageous, whereas speedy repentance commonly followeth precipitated haste.*

*The Scots &
French be-
siege Hadin-
ton.*

1548.

The Queene
of Scots
transported
into France.

The Popish Faction (especially the Clergy, to whom the amity of *England* was little pleasing, in regard of the differences in Religion) and some others obliged to the *French* either in respect of received benefits or future profit, with might and maine interposed to the contrary, and chiefly the Regent, bought with a pension of foure thousand crownes and the Command of one hundred Lances. The *French* Faction prevailed for her transportation. The Fleet from *Leith*, where it harboured, setting saile as if for *France*, fetching a compasse round about *Scotland*, put in at *Dunbritton*, where they embarked the six yeare old Queene, attended by JAMES her base Brother, JOHN ARESKIN, and WILLIAM LEVISTON, who being put backe by contrary windes, and much distressed by tempest, arrived at length in Little *Bretaigne*, and from thence set forward to the Court of *France*, so escaping our Fleet which hovered about *Calais* to intercept them, if (as we were perswaded they needs must) they crossed those neighbouring Straights. *Hadinton* in the meane time being straightly beleaguered, Sir ROBERT BOWES and Sir THOMAS PALMER are with seven hundred Lances and six hundred light Horse sent to relieve it. BUCHANAN saith there were but three hundred Horse, the rest Foote. Of what sort soever they were, it is certaine that before they could reach *Hadington*, they were circumvented and slaine almost to a man. Yet did not the besieged let fall their courages, but bravely defended themselves, vntill FRANCIS Earle of *Shrewsbury* with an Army of twelve thousand *English* and foure thousand Lanfquenets disassieged them, and forced the *French* to retreat. The Earle having supplied the

Towne

1548.

Towne with necessaries, and re-inforced the Garrison, returned to *Berwicke*. What they could not by force, the Enemy hopes more easily to effect by a surprisall. To this end *D. Esé* with some select Bands arrives at *Hadinton* about the breake of day, where having killed the Centinells and taken an halfe moone before the Port, some seeke to force the gates, some invade our adioining Granaries. The noise and shouts of the assailants gives an alarme to the Garrison, who give fire to a Canon planted before the Port, the bullet whereof penetrating the gate, makes way through the close ranks of the Enemies, and so affrights them, that they seeke to save themselves by flight.

Fortune was not so favourable to the garrisons of *Humes* and *Fastcastle*, where by the negligence of the Centinells, the designs of the Enemy were crowned with success. At *Humes*, being conducted by some that knew all the secret passages, they clime vp a steepe rocke, enter, massacre the secure Garrison, and enioy the place. At *Fastcastle* the Governor had commanded the neighbouring Husbandmen at a prefixed day to bring in their contribution of corne and other necessary provision. The Enemy makes vse of this oportunity. Souldiers habited like Peasants at the day come fraught with their burthens, wherof easing their horses, they carry them on their shoulders over the bridge, which ioined two rockes together, and so gaine entrance: the watch-word being given, they cast downe their burthens, kill the Centinells, open the gates to their fellowes, and become masters of the place. Neither were our navall enterprises fortunate, being at *Saint Minian* and *Merne* repelled with losse.

In Autumne the Earle of *Rutland* with three thou-

Humes Castle

and

Fastcastle
gained by
the Enemy.

1548.

thousand Lanfquenets and some bands drawne out of the frontier Garrisons arrives at *Haddington*. Who duly considering that this Towne could not be kept any longer without the excessive charges of iust Army, forasmuch as the Countrey about being miserably forraged, it could not be victualled without great difficulty and danger; rased the walls, fired the houses, brought away the Artillery, and finding no resistance, returned in safety to *Berwick*. BUCHANAN refers it to the ensuing yeare, but I follow the record of our owne Historians.

Gardiner Bishop of Winchester committed to the Tower.

And having thus far spent the yeare abroad, I at length returne home, where I finde STEPHEN GARDINER Bishop of *Winchester* in the Tower. He was a man very learned, and no lesse subtle, adhering to the Popish Faction, yet so, as that hee would be content to accommodate himselfe to the current of the times. King HENRY had employed him in many Embassages, and that with ample authority, vnder whom he durst not oppose the proceedings confirmed by enacted Lawes. And vnder EDWARD hee repressed himselfe for a time, seemingly consenting to the commenced Reformation. But his dissimulation was at length manifestly discovered to the Privy Counsaile, who had commanded him in a Sermon at *Pauls-Crosse* to signify his approbation of the present estate of the Church: which he accordingly did on the nine and twentieth of *June*, but so ambiguously and obscurely, that he satisfied them not. And being expressly forbidden to speake any thing concerning the *Eucharist*, he knowing that by the Lawes nothing was definitively determined in that point, did so eagerly assert that Papisticall (I will not say Capernaiticall) Corporall and Reall Presence of CHRIST in the Sacra-

Sacrament, that he wonderfully offended the mindes of many, but especially of the Lords of the Counsaile. Wherefore he was on the thirtieth of *Iune* committed, and obstinately refusing to acknowledge his errour, was two yeares after deprived of his Bishopricke, and (as he was of a turbulent spirit) least hee should practise any thing against the Estate, detained nevertheless in prison vntill the death of EDWARD. In the meane time Archbishop CRANMER by writing oppugned that grosse and carnall assertion of the Church of *Rome* concerning CHRISTs Presence in the Sacrament: whom GARDINER secretly answered vnder the fictitious name of *M. Constantius*.

Neither did that Bloud-sucker BONER Bishop of *London* (who in Queene MARYES raigne so heated the Kingdome with the funerall piles of so many Saints) speed any better then *Winchester*. For being likewise enioined to preach at the *Crosse*, hee did it so coldly, omitting many of those points wherof he was commanded to speake, that hee was likewise committed, deprived of his Bishopricke, and so lived vntill Queene MARY set them both at liberty. What the objections were against CVTBERT TONSTALL Bishop of *Duresme*, and GEORGE DAY Bishop of *Chichester*, I do not finde, but that they ran the same fortune is manifest. They were both very learned Prelates, but especially TONSTALL, a milde man, and of most sweet conditions, in regard wherof I do not a little wonder that he was so hardly dealt with: But the drift of the punishments of such men, who in HENRY's time were accounted the chiefe Lights of our Church, I conceive to have beene, that the rest of that Order might by their example be admonished, without dissimulation either to resigne their Bishoprickes to others that were thought more worthy, or be induced

1548.

and deprived.

Boner Bishop
of London
committed
also.

1548.

ced to conforme themselves to the present Reformation of the Church, according to the prescript of the Lawes in that behalfe lately enacted. And yet I would there were not sufficient cause to suspect, that this was but a made opportunity, the removall of these obstacles making way for the invasion of these widow Seas. For as soone as TONSTALL was exautored, that rich Bishopricke of *Duresme* by Act of Parliament was wracked, the chiefe revenues and customes of it being incorporated to the Crowne, and and the rest in despight of the Tenants so guelded, that at this day it scarce possesseth the third part of it's antient revenues. Yet did Queene MARY seriously endeavour the restitution of those religious portions: Queene ELIZABETH would hardly consent that it should lose any of it's plumes, (yet some it did) and King JAMES hath lately enacted against the Alienation of Church lands, yea even to the Crowne, otherwise then vpon reservation of a reasonable Rent, and the returne of them to the Church after the expiration of three lives or one and twenty yeares. The hungry Courtier finding how good a thing the Church was, had now for some yeares become acquainted with it out of a zealous intet to Prey: neither could the horridnesse of her sacred skeleton as yet so worke on him, as to divert his resolutions, and compassionately to leave the Church to her religious poverty. Beside, the infancy of the King in this uncertaine ebbe and flow of Religion, made her oportune to all kinde of sacriledge. So that we are deservedly to thanke the Almighty Guardian of the Church, that these Locusts have not quite devoured the maintenance of the Laborers in this *English* Vineyard. For we yet retaine that antient forme of government in the Primitive Church by Bishops, who have for the most part wherewith to support their honorable

norable Function, as likewise have other those subordinate Prelats, Deans, Archdeacons, & Canons of Cathedral Churches: & as for our Preachers of the more polite & learned sort, we thinke him little befriended by Fortune, who long liveth in expectation of a competent preferment. I would the residue of the Reformed Churches of Christendome had not beene pared so neere the quicke by *precise hands*, that but some few of them might in this kinde be paralelled with ours.

1548.

Discord betweene the Duke of Somerset and his Brother the Lord Admirall.

And now behold two Brothers acting their severall Tragedies. Icalously, Envy, and Ambition infernall Furies, had armed them against each other, and the Pride of the Feminine Sex prepared them for the Lists. A lamentable exigent, wherein the losse of his Adversary must be the destruction of each; wherein the Kingdome must groane at the losse of one, both being in the Estate incompatible: wherein the King himselfe must (as most suspect he did) suffer, that he might not suffer. THOMAS SEIMOUR Lord Admirall had married CATHARINE PARR the Widow of the deceased King. What correspondence there might be betweene Her (who had beene the Wife of the late Sovereigne) and the Duchesse of Somerset, whose Husband being Protector of the Realme, in point of command little differed from a Sovereigne, and had over his Brother the Admirall the advantages of Age, Dignity, and generall Esteeme, if any man cannot without difficulty conjecture, I refer him to the first booke of HERODIAN, where let him observe the contentions arising betweene CRISPINA the Wife of COMMODVS, and LVCILLA, who had beene formerly married to L. VERVS the Emperour. But in this the divers dispositions of the Brothers set on edge on the emulous humors of their Wives. The Duke was

Gg

milde,

1548.

milde, affable, free, open, and no way malicious: the Admirall was naturally turbulent, fierce, ambitious, and conceived himselfe to be of the two the fitter for publique government. Presently after the death of HENRY, the Admirall thrust on by the flattery of his overweening conceits, resolved to ad a lustre to his good parts, by marrying the Lady ELIZABETH, as yet indeed scarce marriageable. But the Protector wisely considering how rash and perilous this proiect was, frustrated that designe. By his after marriage with CATHARINE a most beautifull and noble Lady, and abounding with wealth befitting her dignity, most men were confident, that the gulse of his vast desires would have beene satisfied; but the Law wherby he was condemned (though peradventure enacted by strength of Faction) will manifest the contrary. What notice I have received, and what the publique Records testify concerning this, being perswaded, that they swarve not much from the truth, I thinke I may without blame relate. The Admirall having now fortified himselfe with money and friends, and deeming his Brothers Lenity, Sluggishnesse; began to behold him with the eye of contempt, and to cast about how to dispossesse him of the saddle, and (being of like degree of consanguinity to the King) to enioy the seat himselfe. To the furtherance of this proiect it would be conduci- ble, secretly to vilify and traduce the Protectors actions, to corrupt the Kings Servants, especially if in any degree of favor, by faire words and large promises by degrees to assure himselfe of the Nobility, to secure his Castle of *Holt* with a Magazine of warlike provision, but above all to take care for money the nerves of *War* and assurance of *Peace*. These things having beene ordered with exact diligence, and for supply of coigne the Exchequer mightily
pilled,

1548.

pilled, he vnmaskes himselfe to some of the Nobility, signifying his intent of setting himselfe at the Sterne, ~~and~~ forcibly ceasing on the Kings person. Nay his madnesse so far transported him, that to one of them, conditionally that his assistance were not wanting to the advancement of his designes, he promised that the King should marry his daughter. In the meane time the Queene his Wife being in September delivered of a Daughter, died in child-bed, and that not without suspicion of poison. For after her death he more importunately sought the Lady ELIZABETH then ever, eagerly endeavoring to procure her consent to a clandestine marriage (as was that with the deceased Queene) and not vntill after the Nuptials, to crave the assent of the King or the Lords of the Counsaile.

Anno Dom. 1549. Reg. 3.

1549.

BUt the Admiralls proiects being oportunely discovered, and a Parliament lately assembled, he is by the authority thereof committed to the Tower, and without triall condemned. The Parliament being on the fourteenth of March dissolved, he is on the sixt day after publicquely beheaded, having first vehemently protested, that hee never willingly did either actually endeavour, or seriously intend any thing against the Person of the King, or the Estate. Concerning his death the opinions of men were divers, their censures divers. Among some the Protector heard ill, for suffering his Brother to be executed without ordinary course of triall: as for these faults proceeding

*The Lord
Admirall
beheaded.*

1549.

from the violence of youthfull heat, they might better have beene pardoned, then the King be left destitute of an Vnkles helpe, or himselfe of a Brothers. Nay (they say) there wanted not those that before this severe course taken with the Admirall, admonished the Protector to have a heedy regard to this action: Some peradventure might be content to let a Brother shed *teares*; to shed his *bloud*, when they might prevent it, scarce any: it was much to be feared least his Brothers death would be his ruine, and the losse of such Friends, a hazard to the King. Others highly extolled his impartial proceeding, whom fraternal affection could not divert from righting his Countrey: for if Consanguinity or Alliance to the King should be a sufficient cause to exempt them from punishment, who should plot and contrive the change of government in the Estate; vpon what ticklish termes should we all stand, whiles nothing could be certaine and sure in the publique government? Others maintained the necessity of cutting off the Admirall, and that it stood the Protector vpon so to do, if he either regarded his owne or the Kings safeguard. For at what other marke did the Admirall aime, but that having seised on the Kings Person, removed his Brother from the Protectorship, and married the Lady ELIZABETH, he might by poison or some other meanes make away the young King already deprived of his Friends, and as in the right of his Wife invest himselfe in the Regall Throne, wherto the Lady MARY (although the elder Sister) as incestuously begotten, could make no claime? And thus much was in a Sermon delivered before the King by HUGH LATIMER, who having ten yeares since resigned

1549.

ned his Bishopricke, had also hitherto abstained from preaching, vntill after the death of King HENRY this Light was againe restored, that by his rayes he might illustrate Gods Church. But how true his coniectures were concerning the Lord SEIMOUR, I will not vnder take to determine. Whether faulty in his ambition, or overborne by his envious aduersaries, thus ended the Admirall his life, who was indeed a valiant Commander, and not vnfit for a Consultation, in whose ruine the Protector was likewise involved.

Not long after this great mans fall, the People throughout almost the whole Realme brake out into a Rebellion, wherto the frequent vsurpations and avarice of the Gentry, who in many places enclosed the common and waste grounds for their owne pleasure and private profit, had incited them. The Lords of the Counsaile vpon notice of the Peoples discontents, and the probability of an Insurrection vnles speedy course were taken to appease them, dispatched some into Kent (the Fountaine of this generall Vprore) who should vpon due examination of the causes of the Peoples grievances, admonish those that were in that kinde faulty, by throwing open the Inclosures to restore to the People what had beene vniustly taken from them; otherwise they should by Authority Royall be forced therunto, and by their punishments serve to deterre others from the like insolencies and oppressions. The most part obey, and (a most gratefull spectacle to the People) cause their new made Inclosures to be againe laid open. Wherewith Report acquainting the neighbouring Shires, the vn-ruly multitude enraged, that like restitution had not as yet beene made to them, not expecting the necessary

*An Insur-
rection*

1549.

in Nor-
folke.

sary direction of the Magistrate, but as if each one were authorized in his owne cause, both to iudge of and revenge received iniuries, taking armes leuell the Dikes, assert the inclosed Lands, and give hope that there their fury would be at a stand. But as the Sea having once transgressed the iust limits of it's shore, by little and little eats it's way to an Inundation, and is not but with excessive toile to be forced within it's vsuall bounds: So these having once transcended the prescripts of the Lawes, let themselves loose to all kinde of licentiousnesse, over-run and spoile the Countrey, murther those that favour not their proceedings, and at length by the conflux of the baser sort and malcontents so increase their numbers, that it was not to make head against them with small Forces. And although this plague raged more in *Norfolke-Shire* then any where's, yet had it so spred it's contagion over the most part of the Kingdome, that it was scarce any where sincere and free from infection. For the Counties of *Kent, Oxford, Surrey, Buckingham, Essex, Cambridge, Yorke, Lincolne*, but especially *Devon* and *Somerset* were imbroiled in these tumults. In *Norfolke* only had twenty thousand assembled, who now confident of their strength, did no more talke of Inclosures, but stretched their complaints to a higher straine; as that, *The free-borne Commonalty was oppressed by a small number of Gentry, who glut themselves with pleasure, whiles the poore Commons wasted with daily labour do like pack-horses live in extreme slavery. But howsoever the calamities incident to this present life may with a constant patience be endured, the Soule is to be redeemed even with a thousand deaths. Holy Rites established by antiquity, are abolished, new ones are autorized, and a new forme of Religion obtruded. To other evils death gives an end: but*

if

1549.

if they suffer their soules to be contaminated and polluted by this kinde of impiety, what thing is there that can equall them in miseries, to whom the end of these present ones is but the beginning of some more horrid, namely of the paines infernall, which no death can ever terminate. Why then should they not go to the Court, and appoint the King yet in his minority new Counsailours, removing those who now ruling as they list, confound things sacred and prophane, regarding nothing els but the enriching of themselves with the publique Treasure, that they may riot it amid the publique calamities?

This was the common complaint and resolution, especially of the Devonshire Rebels, who having among them made choice of their Chieftaines, did indeavour to vnite themselves with the rest of their fellow Rebels. But to keepe them from ioyning, Forces are dispatched, some into Norfolke, some into Devonshire. For Norfolke are designed onely fiftene hundred vnder the conduct of the Marquis of Northampton, who for a time bravely defended that spacious but weake City Norwich against the insolent Clownes. But his small troupes being much diminished by the losse of the Lord Sheffeld and some others, he was at last faine to quit the City to the Enemy, who after spoile barbarously set it on fire, and consumed a great part of the edifices. This ill successe drave the Lords of the Counsaile to a more serious apprehension of the danger, who therupon sent the Earle of Warwicke with more competent Forces, who (as he was an excellent Commander) not only forced the Rebels to relinquish the City, but also pressed them so hard in their retreat, that he compelled them to fight. They seeing a necessity of battaile imposed, placed all their Captives (for the most part Gentlemen) manacled and chained together, in front, that they alone might beare the fury of the onset,

1549.

set, and dull both the swords and courages of the Royallists. But their loyalty was not so ill recompenced, as to suffer for it, scarce any of them falling by the sword. The Rebels were neverthelesse overthrowne, and all either taken or slaine except a very few, who rallying themselves, seemed desperately resolved to renew the fight. But the proposall of a Pardon made them cast away their armes, and peaceably to depart. The number of the chiefe authors of this Commotion, who were hanged, was great. But ROBERT KET a Tanner, who in those times, and by that trade had gathered a fortune of a brace of thousands, was above all as in Fault, so in Execution remarkable. He had beene the Chieftaine in this Rebellion, and was not in reason to be obscured among the common sort: wherfore it being thought fit that he should surmount them in the glory of a more notorious punishment, he was fairely hanged in chaines on the very top of *Norwich Castle*.

and in Devonshire.

While the Easterne parts of the Kingdome were thus possessed, the Western parts were not lesse tormented with the same Furies. *Devonshire* and *Cornwall* with some additions out of *Somersetshire*, had on the same pretences armed fifteene thousand men, who after they had licentiously ransacked the Countrey, at length sat downe before the famous City of *Excester*. Forty dayes they besieged it, and were repulsed by the Inhabitants, though utterly destitute of warlike provision. On the sixt of *August*, JOHN Lord *Russell* (after Earle of *Bedford*) entring the City with forces and munition, disassieged it, pursued the Rebels, slew some, tooke others, to the number of foure thousand, whereof many were after executed; but especially HUMFREY ARVNDELL Captaine of *S. Michaels Mount* in *Cornwall*, a man of antient descent and sufficiently ample revenues: so that

1549.

that I cannot sufficiently wonder, what madnesse drave him to associate himselfe with this desperate and unruly rabble. With him were hanged ROBERT BOCHIN, IO. TOMSON, ROGER BARRET, IO. VLCOCKE, WILL. ASA, JAMES NORTON, IO. BARON, and RICHARD BENET Priests, and besides them, IOHN and JAMES ROSOGAN, IO. PAYNE, THO. VNDERHILL, and IO. SOLMAN, all prime incendiaries and chiefe authors of this tumult. The City of *Excester* in memory of this their delivery hath ever sithence with an anniversary solemnity kept the sixt of *August* holy. As for the other Counties infected with the reliques of this rebellion, the evill being tempestively suppressed before it spread it selfe, and the ringleaders punished, they were quickly reduced to their former temper.

Neither were our affaires more peaceable abroad then at home. For HENRY King of *France* taking advantage of our domestique sedition, not regarding the League concluded betweene vs and his Father, invaded *Boloignois*, where his successe was such, that he was animated to greater attempts. He sets forth a Fleet for the taking in of the Isles of *Iersey* and *Guarnesey* the sole portions remaining to the *English* of the Duchy of *Normandy*. At these Isles the *French* are with great losse driven aboard their ships. At the landing they lost a thousand men, and we very few. About *Bouloigne*, * *Mont-Lambert*, *Sellaque*, and *Ambleteul* were lost. *Sellaque* was defended by two Ensignes: But having beene battered by the Enemy, while we vnwarily parley with MONTMORENCY, was on the five and twentieth of *August* forced by them. At *Ambleteul* were six Ensignes of Foote, who for some dayes made good the place: But finding themselves vnable long to hold out against so

Hh

great

*Some Forts
lost in Bo-
loignois.*

* Corruptly
Bontlambert.

1549.

Enmity be-
tweene the
Protector
& the Earle
of Warwick.

great forces, vpon no other termes then grant of lives, yeelded the Fort to the *French*. The losse of these places so daunted the Garrison at *Blanconet*, that having beene scarce saluted by the Enemies Cannon, vpon condition of life and goods they quitted the place. Neither was this the last important effect of our conceived terrour: for the *English* at *Mont-Lambert* not so much as attending the comming of the Enemy, fired their lodgings, made their provision vnusefull, and retreated to *Guisnes*. The Fort at the *Tower of Ordre* fortified both by nature and art, gave a period to this yeares successe; standing resolutely vpon defence vntill the extremity of Winter forced the *French* to raise their siege.

The losse of these small pieces set the Protector in the wane of the vulgar opinion, and afforded sufficient matter for Envy to worke on. Among the Lords of the Privy Counsaile the most eminent was the Earle of *Warwicke*, a man of a vast spirit, which was the more enlarged by the contemplation of his great Acts performed both abroad and at home. He had long looked asquint vpon *Somersets* greatnesse, whom in a favorable esteeme of himselfe he deemed far beneath him; and was withall perswaded, that could he but remove the Duke, due regards would cast the Protectorship on him. The consideration also of the Dukes nakednesse (disarmed of that metalsome peice the Admirall)

——— (*En quo discordia Fratres
Perduxit miseros*) ———

made his hopes present themselves in the more lively shapes. He seekes about for sufficient matter where- with to charge the Duke, who could not be long ignorant of these practises against him. The Duke fin-
ding

1549.

ding himselfe aimed at, but not well discerning whether the Earle intended a legall or military pro-
 cesse against him, on the sixt of *October*, from *Hampton-Court* where the King then resided, sent letters to the City of *London*, requiring from thence an aid of a thousand men, who should guard the King and him from the treacherous attempts of some ill-affected Subjects. And in the meane time presseth in the adiacent Countrey; where having raised a reasonable company, he the same night carried away the King, attended by some of the Nobility and some of the Counsaile, from thence to *Windsore*, a place, because fortified, more safe, and convenient for resistance. But the Earle had made a greater part of the Counsaile, who accompanied him at *London*. To them he makes a formall complaint against the Protector, beseeching them, by their assistance to secure him from the Protectors malice, who sought to intrap him for his life. These Lords send a contre-letter to the *Londoners*, demanding aids of them for the delivery of the King out of the hands of his Enemy (for so they were pleased to terme the Duke.) Then they send abroad Proclamations, wherein they insert the chiefe heads of their accusation; as that By sowing seeds of discord, the Duke had troubled that settled and peaceable estate wherein King HENRY had left this Kingdome; and had beene the chiefe cause that it had lately beene ingaged in Ciuill wars to the losse of many thousand liues: That many Forts conquered by HENRY with hazard of his Person, were by the Dukes either cowardise or treachery regained by the Enemy: That he regarded not the advice of the rest of the Lords of the Counsaile, and had plainly neglected King HENRY'S instructions concerning the governement of the Kingdomes of England and Irland:

1549.

That his chiefe studies, and wherein he was most scene, were to rake up wealth, to maintaine a Faction among the Nobility, and yet comply with both parties for his owne advantages, to build stately Palaces far exceeding the proportion of a Subiect, and that even in the very instant that the Estate did shrink under the burthen both of intestine and foraine wars.

The Duke certified of their proceedings, and seeing himselfe forsaken (for the Londoners being prepossessed, were so far from supplying him, that they at the same time afforded his Adversary five hundred, and the greatest part of the Nobility had by joining with the Earle made their cause one) at last forsooke himselfe also; and craving of the adverse party, that they would abstaine from violence toward him, and proceed only according to the vsuall courses of Legall tryall; delivered the King to their Tuition, and remitted himselfe to their disposal; by whom on the fourteenth of October he was committed to the Tower, together with Sir MICHAEL STANHOP, Sir THOMAS SMITH, Sir IOHN THIN, and some others.

The Protector committed.

The death of Paul the Third, Pope.

Cardinal Poole elected Pope.

On the tenth of November died PAUL the Third, having sat Pope neere about fiftene yeares. The Conclave of Cardinalls consulting about the election of a new Pope, began to have regard of Cardinall POOLE, in whome the greatnesse of his Extract, his Vertuous Life, Gravity, and admirable Learning, were very considerable motives. The Conclave was at that time divided, some were Imperialists, some French, and a third Part (wherof the Cardinall FARNESE was principall) stood Neuter. These later at length joining with the Imperialists cast their vnanimous Votes vpon POOLE. Who
vpon

1549.

upon notice of his Election, blamed them for their rashnesse, advising them againe and againe, that they should not in their Consultations be mis-led by perturbation of minde, or do any thing for friendship or favour, but totally to direct their cogitations to the honor of God and the profit of his Church.

P O O L E himselfe having thus put off the matter, the *French* Cardinalls began to alledge, That in regard of the difficulties of wayes and distance of places, many of the Colledge were yet absent, and that there was no reason why they should with such precipitation proceed to a partiall Election before the Conclave were full. The Cardinall C A R A F F A (who some yeares after was Pope, by the name of P A V L the Fourth) a waiward old man, whose cold spirits were set on fire by Envy and Ambition, sought to make vse of P O O L E's modesty to his owne advantage, hoping himselfe as eminent and in as faire a way as any of the Colledge (P O O L E excepted) might be advanced to the Chaire. And to lessen the favour of the Conclave towards P O O L E, he tooke himselfe to calumnies, accusing P O O L E of suspicion of Heresy and Incontinency, that *In Germany and his Legacy at Trent, he had too much favoured the Lutherans, had often entertained I M M A N V E L T R E M E L L I V S, had inrolled A N T O N I O F L A M I N I O suspected of Lutheranisme, in his Family, and promoted him to many Ecclesiasticall Dignities; and in his Legacy at Viterbo used not that severity against that sort of men, that was requisite. Neither could that composed gravity so free him from the taine of loosenesse, but that many were of opinion he had cloistered a Virgin of his owne begetting: That he wondred what the Conclave meant, with so impetuous a current to proceed*

1549.

ceed to the election of this one man, and be a forainer: as if Italy it selfe were so barren of deserving men, that we must be faine to send for this man out of Britaine, almost the farthest part of the knowne World, to invest him in the Papacy: wherof what would be the effect, but that the Emperour, at whose devotion this man wholly was, might once againe make himselfe Master of Rome, now by indulgence, as before by force.

To these allegations P O O L E's reply was such, that he not only cleered himselfe, but also quickened the almost extinguished desires of the Conclave to elect him. The major part wherof assembling at his chamber by night, wished L V D O V I C O P R I V L O the Cardinalls bosome friend (betweene whome the correspondence of their dispositions had bred a mutuall affection) to awake him, for that having elected him, they were purposely come (an accustomed ceremony) to Adore him, and dissolve the Conclave. P R I V L O having signified to him with testimonies of excessive ioy, the intent of these Cardinalls, was ^{en}gently blamed by him, and they dismissed with this answer, That a matter of so great consequence (carrying with it so great a burthen, that it would deterre an ingenuous man from the acceptation of it) was not to be tumultuously, but upon mature deliberation orderly to be transacted: as for the season, it was utterly vnfit, forasmuch as God was the God of Light, and not of Darkenesse: they should therefore do well to defer it vntill the next day, and if then their resolutions proved the same, he would submit himselfe to their pleasures. The Italian Cardinalls conceiving these delays to proceed out of stupidity, began to contemne him; and changing their determinations, a little after pitched vpon Cardinall M O N T A N V S, whome they created Pope, by the name of I V L I V S the Third.

Anno

1550.

Anno Dom. 1550. Reg. 4.

THe Duke of *Somerset* having now for three moneths continued a prisoner, and not convicted of any crime which might touch his life; it being not thought fitting that so great a man, lately Protector of the King's Person and Realme, should for a small offence be condemned to perpetuall imprisonment; is vnder-hand dealt with to submit himselfe, with acknowledgement that hee had deserved this or whatsoever greater punishment the King should be pleased to inflict on him, and withall to implore the favour of his Maiesties Royall Clemency. To this he easily condescended, and was on the sixt of *February* set at liberty, but not restored to the dignity of Protector, onely contenting himselfe with the ranke of a Privy Counsaillor. But it being conceived, that revenge might draw the Duke to new practises, by mediation of Friends hee is reconciled to the Earle of *Warwicke*, and that this atonement might be the more firme and sincere, the Dukes Daughter is on the third of *June* married to the Viscont *Lisle* the Earle of *Warwicks* Sonne, the King gracing the Nuptialls with his presence. **T H V A - N V S** (I know not vpon what grounds) writeth, That the Earle by a kinde of counterfeit shew that he was desirous of the restitution of the Romish Religion, had setled himselfe in the good opinion of the vulgar, who had not yet learned to renew themselves by casting off the old skin, but revered Superstition for it's reputed Antiquity: and that his dissimulation being discovered, fearing least he should be forsaken of themwhom he had with false hopes deluded, the consideration thereof, and of the Dukes milde and free

*The Duke of
Somerset set
at liberty.*

1550.

*Peace with
the Scots and
French.*

free disposition, would indeere his Adversary to them: to prevent this danger he contrived this alliance with the Duke, and procured his liberty.

In the meane of these passages, on the nineteenth of *January* the Lord *Russell* Lord Privy Seale, was created Earle of *Bedford*, WILLIAM Lord *Saint-John* Earle of *Wiltshire*, and Sir WILLIAM PAGET Lord *Paget*.

The Earle of *Bedford* and the Lord *Paget* were within three dayes after with Sir WILLIAM PETERS and Sir IOHN MASON dispatched into *France* for the Treatie of a Peace with the Deputies appointed by the *French*, who were MONTMORECY Gouvernour of *Picardy*, GASPER COLIGNY Lord of *Chaſtillon* afterward Admirall of *France*, ANDREW GILLAR MORTAIR and WILLIAM BOUCHERELLE. The Lord *Paget* not long before had beene sent to the Emperour to signifie how we were distressed on the one side by the *Scots*, and on the other by the *French*, and miserably rent at home by intestine dissensions, that our necessities required speedy succours, or would force vs to condescend to an inconvenient Peace with *France*. But perceiving nothing was to bee obtained of him, wee stroke hands with the *French* vpon these conditions.

That Boloigne and all the Forts in Boloignois should be surrendred to the French, together with the Artillery and other military provision:

That in lieu thereof the King of France should pay vnto EDVWARD foure hundred thousand crownes by equall portions at two payments:

That

That the English should restore to the Scots, Lauder and Douglas: and (if the Queene of Scots should desire it) should rase their Fortifications in Haymon and at Roxburgh.

1550.

The Emperour was on both sides comprehended in the League, and the Queene of Scots by the French. The two Kings presented each other with their military Orders; and (as one writeth) it was on both parts agreed on, that EDWARD should marry one of the Daughters of France. For the ratification of the Articles, on the eight of Aprill Hostages were given:

By Vs,

The Duke of Suffolke,

The Earle of Hertford Sonne to the

Duke of Somerset,

The Earle of Arundell,

The Earle of Derby,

The Earle of Bath.

By the French,

JOHN of Bourbon Duke of Anguien,

CLAVD of Loraine Marquis of Mayenne,

FRANCIS Sonne to the Constable

MONTMORENCY,

Fi

LEWIS

1550.

LEWIS of Tremoville,
FRANCIS of Vendosme Vidame
of Chartres,
CLAVD d' Annebalt.

This Peace betweene vs and *France* was on the third of *March* solemnely proclaimed in *London*, and on the five and twentieth of *Aprill*, *Bouloigne* being accordingly surrendered to the *French*, our Hostages were returned.

On the thirtieth of Iuly died the Lord WRIOTHSLEY Knight of the Garter, late Lord Chancellour of *England* and Earle of *Southampton*. He had about the beginning of this Kings Raigne delivered vp the Seale, the Custody wherof was committed to the Lord Rich. But having beene about halfe a yeare past removed (as was also the Earle of *Arundell*, but for what cause is vncertaine) from the Counsaile Table, he at length (whether out of grieve or some other cause, fell sicke and died. He was father to HENRY the second Earle, and Grandfather to HENRY the third Earle of *Southampton* not long since deceased, who having tasted of both fortunes, did heretofore as generously behave himselfe in adversity, as he did since moderately in prosperity, whereto by the Clemency of our late Soveraigne he was restored.

Anno

1551.

Anno Dom. 1551. Reg. 5.

Mention hath formerly beene made concerning the Sweating Sicknesse, a disease to which *England* hath given a name, as well in regard of it's originall, as of the knowne disposition of our bodies to admit of this virulent contagion. *England* had beene formerly afflicted with it, but never so mortally as this present yeare. *Shrewsbury* was now the first place acquainted with this Pestilence, there it began in *April*, and thence diffusing it selfe over the most part of the Kingdome, at length it vanished away in the North about the beginning of *October*. The fury of it was such, as if it would never end but by it's proper cruelty, when it should not have left subjects whereon to feed. The dead whome it swept away were numberlesse. In *London* only eight hundred was scarce a seven nights stint. It made it's first entry into this Island in the Reigne of *HENRY* the Seventh *Anno* 1486. and from hence it tooke it's progresse to other Nations. The Infected flowed away, and within the space of twenty foure houres when this malignant disease was most mercifull in it's execution, peradventure within twelve, did sweat out their soules. Women, children, and o'd men it for the most part overpassed, and wreaked it selfe on the robustious youth and well compact middle age, who, if in the beginning of their sickness did but slumber, perished instantly. If it seized on any that were full gorged, the recovery was in a manner desperate. Nay and of others whatsoever

The Sweating Sicknesse.

1551.

The death of
the Duke of
Suffolke.

Acreation
of Dukes and
Earles.

they were, scarce one of a hundred escaped, vntill time had found out a remedy: the manner wherof was thus: If any be taken in the day time, hee must without shifing of his apparell betake himselfe to bed: If by night and in bed, let him not stir thence, vntill twenty foure howers be run. In the meane let the coverture be such, that it provoke not sweat, but that it may gently distill of it selfe: if it be possible for him so long to forbear, let him not eat nor drinke more then may moderately serve to extinguish thirst: But above all, let him so patiently endure heat, that hee vncouer not any part of his body, no not so much as a hand or a foot. The strangeness of this disease I do not so much admire, for that *PLINY* in his twenty sixt Booke the first Chapter witnesseth, and daiy experience teacheth vs, that every age produceth new and Epidemicall diseases. But that which surpasseth the search of humane reason is this, that this Pestilence afflicted the *English* in what part of the world soever, without touching the Natives, but in *England* alone. This dire contagion promiscuously impoverished the Land of people of all sorts: among those of especiall note were *HENRY* Duke of *Suffolke*, and his Brother, who were the Sonnes of *CHARLES BRANDON*, and the Kings Cousins germane, young Noblemen of great and lively hopes: by the death of *HENRY*, the Duchy was for some few howers devolved to the younger Brother, who had the vnhappy honour but to be seized of the Title and dy. The Lord *Gray* Marquis of *Dorset* having married *FRANCIS* the eldest Daughter of *CHARLES BRANDON*, in the right of his Wife made claime to the Duchy, and was on the eleventh of *October* invested in it.

At

At what time also JOHN DUDLEY Earle of *Warwicke* was created Duke of *Northumberland*: WILLIAM POWLET Earle of *Wiltshire*, Marquis of *Winchester*: and Sir WILLIAM HERBERT Lord *Cardif* Master of the Horse, Earle of *Pembroke*. The masculine Line of DUDLEY and GRAY hath beene long since extinct: Of the Family of the POWLETS we have spoken already: the Lord HERBERT Brother in law to Queene CATHARINE PARR, derived himselfe from WILLIAM HERBERT in the time of EDWARD the Fourth Earle of *Pembroke*, and was succeeded in the Earledome by his Sonne HENRY Father to WILLIAM the moderne Earle (whose mature wisdom and gravity even in his greener yeares, long since ranked him in the sage Senate of the Privy Counsaile to two successive Kings) and to PHILIP by King JAMES created Earle of *Montgomery*. Then also were knighted Sir JOHN CHEEKE the King's Schoolemaster, Sir HENRY DUDLEY, Sir HENRY NEVILL, and (whome I cannot mention but with due honor) Sir WILLIAM CECILL. CECILL I say, who then Secretary of Estate, was afterward by all *Europe* held in admiration for his wisdom; whome Queene ELIZABETH made Lord Treasurer of *England* and Baron of *Burleigh*, and was whilest he lived a second prop of this Estate; who on the fourth of *August* 1598. piously ended his long, but for the publique weales sake ever restless life, leaving two Sonnes, THOMAS by King JAMES created Earle of *Excester*, and ROBERT out of the same Fountaine of Royall Goodnesse Earle of *Sarisbury* and Lord Treasurer of *England*.

And

1551.

The descent
of the Earles
of *Pembroke*

1551.

Enmity be-
tweene the
Dukes of So-
merfet and
Northum-
berland re-
vived.

And now the ill cemented affections of the Dukes of *Somerfet* and *Northumberland* dissolved into open enmity. In the prosecution wherof, *Somerfet*, otherwise of a most milde disposition (but Patience abused, oft runneth into the extreme of Fury) provoked by continuall iniuries, resolved (as some write) to murther *Northumberland*. To this end, but vnder colour of a visite, privily armed, and well attended by Seconds who awaited him in an vtter chamber, he comes to his Adversary at that time by reason of some indisposition of body keeping his Chamber, hath accesse vnto him naked as hee was in his bed, but is so courteously entertained, and with such smooth language, that the Duke of *Somerfet* good man repenting himselfe of his bloudy resolutions, would not execute what he purposely came for. At his departure one of his conspirators is reported to have asked him, *Whether he had done the feat?* and vpon his denial to have added, *Then you are undone*. This his intent being by his owne Party bewraied, a second accusation is ingrossed against him. The matter is referred to the Counsaile Table, and he on the sixteenth of *October* againe committed to the Tower together with the Duchesse his Wife, the Lord *Gray of Wilton*, Sir *RALPH VANE*, Sir *THOMAS PALMER*, Sir *MILES PARTRIDGE*, Sir *MICHAEL STANHOP*, Sir *THOMAS ARVNDELL*, and many other of his Friends.

On the first of *December* the Marquis of *Winchester* being for that day high Steward, he is arraigned for Treason against the Estate, which hee had not onely ill but treacherously managed; and for conspiracy against the Duke of *Northumberland*. Of Treason he cleered himselfe, and his Peeres acquitted

1551.

ted him. For the Conspiracy he was by his owne confession condemned, and that by vertue of a Law enacted 3. HENR. 7. which made the very intent, nay imagination of killing a Privy Counsaillor, punishable by death. But howsoever the Law (enacted as some conceive vpon somewhat differing intents and meaning) were extended to the highest of it's rigour, yet can I not but wonder, how a man so great in the regards of his Reigning Nephew, of his Honors, of the popular Favour, should be so destitute of Learned Advice, as not to exempt himselfe from a felonious death by his *Clergy*. But such were the times, such his misfortunes in the minority of his Prince; from whose revengefull hand how could the adverse Faction presume themselves secure in the future? Neither could they choose but be somewhat terrified with that ecchoing testimony of the peoples ioy, who seeing that fatall Virge the Axe (vsually marshalling Traitors to the Barre) laied aside vpon his freedome from the guilt of Treason; from *Westminster* Hall certified that part of the City by their loud festivall acclamations, of the gladsome tidings of their Favorite's conceived Absolution. And these peradventure might be causes that his execution was deferred.

Hitherto had the Estate patiently indured the obstinate opposition of some Bishops in point of Reformation, who for their *non-conformity* are at length deprived and others substituted in their Bishopricks. Of some of them we have occasionally already spoken, whose censures notwithstanding fall in with this yeare. GARDINER Bishop of *Winchester* was deprived the fourteenth of *February*; DAY of *Chichester*, and HEATH of *Worcester* on the tenth of *October*: TONSTALL of *Duresme* on the twentieth of *December* committed to the Tower; and

BONER

Certaine Bishops deprived.

1551.

*Some of the
Servants of
the Lady
Mary com-
mitted.*

BONER of London on the first of October 1549. had beene already exautorated. All of them for feare of practising against the Estate were deteined in Prison.

And on the last of October FRANCIS INGLEFIELD, WALGRAVE, and ROCHESTER Servants to the Lady MARY, as also FRANCIS MALLET Doctor of Divinity her Chaplaine, were committed. I cannot speake any thing certaine of the causes of any of their imprisonments, excepting Doctor MALLET's only. At the Emperours request he was permitted to celebrate Masse, but with this limitation, *In the presence of the Lady MARY, not otherwise*: for adventuring to celebrate in her absence, it was thought fit he should be punished for his presumptuous transgression. With the Lady herselfe all meanes had beene vsed to conforme her to the Times: the King himselfe had taken much paines with her by often suafory Letters, the Counsaile had done the like, and personally to satisfie her with reason, divers learned men had beene imploied. But their labours were vaine; for *hatred* to our Religion for her Mothers, for her owne sake, and some *politique respects* (for by the Decrees of our Religion she was made illegitimate, and consequently cut off from the Succession to the Crowne, if her brother should dy issuleffe) confirmed her in that Superstition which she had sucked from her Mother.

*An Arrian
burned.*

On the fourteenth of Aprill one GEORGE PARIS a Germane was at London burned for Arrianisme.

*An Earth-
quake.*

On the five and twentieth of May, Croydon and seven or eight other Villages in Surrey were terribly shaken with an Earthquake.

*The Queene
of Scots in
England.*

Toward the beginning of November, MARY Dowager of Scotland arriving at Portsmouth, sent to the

the King and craved leave to passe through England into Scotland. Which being granted, and she invited to London, entred the City on the second of November, where her entertainment was generall and Royall. On the sixt of November she departed for Scotland, and had the charges of her whole Retinue borne vntill she arrived there in safety.

About the same time also the Earle of Arundell and the Lord Paget were (but for what causes is vncertaine) committed to the Tower. In the ensuing Aprill the Garter was taken from the Lord Paget, and conferred on the Earle of Warwick the Duke of Northumbberlands eldest Sonne. As for the Earle of Arundell he was on the third of December in the next yeare set at liberty.

On the one and twentieth of December was the Lord Rich removed from the Chancellorship, and THOMAS GOODRICH Bishop of Ely made Lord Chancellor.

The Earle of Arundell & the Lord Paget committed.

The Bishop of Ely Lord Chancellor.

Anno Dom. 1552. Reg. 6.

1552.

THe Duke of Somerset had now continued two moneths in prison since his condemnation. At length the violence of his enemies (notwithstanding the Kings desire to save his Vnkle, vnder whose tuition he had passed his childehood) drew him to the Scaffold. Being on the twenty foure of Ianuary brought to the place of execution, he in this manner bespake the Assembly:

Being by the Law condemned, I here willingly submit my selfe, by exemplary punishment to satisfie it's Rigour. That God hath beene pleased to grant me so long a preparative

The Duke of Somerset beheaded.

K k

tive

1552.

tive to my end, I humbly thanke his eternall Goodnesse: But in that he hath beene farther pleased to inspire me with the knowledge of his Truth, and to make me an instrument for the propagation of the same, I can never sufficiently magnify his Mercies. In this do I reioice, in this only do I triumph: beseeching him, that his Church in this Realme being now reformed according to the Institution of the antient Primitive, the Members therof may conforme their lives to the purity of its received Doctrine.

More he would have said, but a strange tumult and sudden consternation of the Assembly interrupted him. The People possessed with a Panique terror, as it were with an vnanimous consent cried out, *Fly quickly, fly*: insomuch that of that infinite multitude which the expectation of the Dukes death had drawne together, as many as well could seeking to shift for themselves, many are troden to death, and others in the throng as vnfortunately prest, the rest amazedly expect their owne destruction, when their owne feares were the greatest danger. The cause of their feares no man could certainly speake: one said he heard a terrible cracke of thunder; another the noise of a troupe of horse: & some over credulous, according to the sway of their affections, ioyfully affirmed that messengers were come with a pardon for the Duke. But certain halberdiers appointed to guard the Duke to the scaffold; but comming tardy, & crying to their fellows, *Away, away*, were more probably the occasion of this tumult. The true meaning of this amphibological word, which commandeth haste *to* and *from*, being

1552.

being mistaken, and withall a company of armed men bending themselves (as was supposed) against the multitude, filled all with terror and confusion. The affrighted people being at length with much ado pacified; the Duke entreating them for a while to containe themselves, that he might with a more settled minde depart out of this world; by prayer commended his soule to God, and then suffered with admirable constancy, neither by voice, gesture, nor countenance shewing himselfe any way dejected or moved at the apprehension of death, vnles peradventure you might take this for a token of feare, that when he covered his eyes with his handkerchiefe, his cheekes had a little more tincture of red then vsuall.

That his death was generally lamented, is manifest. Many there were who kept handkerchiefes dipped in his bloud, as so many sacred Reliques. Among the rest a sprightfull Dame two yeares after, when the Duke of *Northumberland* was led captive through the City for his opposition against Queene MARY, ran to him in the streets, and shaking out her bloudy handkerchief before him, *Behold (said she) the bloud of that worthy man, that good Vnkle of that excellent King, which shed by thy treacherous machination, now at this instant begins to re-venge it selfe vpon thee.* And Sir RALPH VANE, who on the twenty sixt of February was with Sir MILES PARTRIDGE hanged at the same place where the Duke had suffered, at what time also Sir MICHAEL STANHOP and Sir THOMAS ARVNDELL were there beheaded, going to his execution said, that *His bloud would make Northumberland's pillow vneasy to him.* These foure Knights being to be executed, did each of them take God to witnesse, that they never practised any thing against the King nor any of his Counsaile.

To returne to the Duke, such was his end. As for

1552.

his life, he was a pious just man, very zealous in point of Reformation, very sollicitous of the King's safety, every way good, and carefull of the Weale publique, only a little tainted with the Epidemique of those times, who thought it Religion to reforme the Church, as well in it's exuberancy of *meanes*, as of superstitious *Ceremonies*, wherof not a few of our Cathedralls to this day complaine.

A Monster.

Many prodigies ensued his death, wherby many did preface the calamities of succeeding times. In *August* six Dolphins (a fish seldome seene in our seas) were taken in the *Thames*, three neere *Quinborough*, and three a little above *Greenwich*, where the water is scarce tainted with the Seas brackishnesse. On the seventh day of *October* were three Whales cast vp at *Gravesend*. And on the third of *August* at *Middleton* in *Oxford-shire* was borne a Monster, such, as few either Naturalists or Historians write of the like. It had two heads and two bodies as far as the navill distinct, where they were so conioined that they both had but one way of egestion, and their heads looking alwaies contrary waies. The legs and thighes of the one did alwaies ly at the trunke of the other. This (female) Monster lived eightene dayes, and might have longer peradventure, if it had not beene so often opened to satisfie curiosity, that it tooke cold and died.

This yeare the Monastery of the *Franciscan* Friers in *London* was converted into a brave Hospitall, wherin foure hundred poore boyes are maintained, and have education befitting free borne men. It is at this day called *Christ-Church*.

In *Southwarke* also was another like place provided for the reliefe of poore sicke persons, and is dedicated to the memory of Saint *Thomas*.

Anno

1553.

Anno Dom. 1553. Reg. 7.

THis yeare sets a period to yong EDWARDS Reigne, who by the defluxion of a sharpe rheume vpon the lungs shortly after became hectically, and died of a consumption. Some attribute the cause of his sickness to griefe for the death of his Vnkles; some to poison, and that by a nosegay of sweet flowers presented him as a great dainty on New yeares day. But what hopefull Prince was there ever (almost) immaturally taken away, but poison or some other treachery was imputed? Our deluded hopes being converted into griefe, out of passion we bely Fate. Had there beene the least suspicion of any such inhumane practise, Queene MARY would never have suffered it to have passed as an act of indifferency without an inquest. It was doubtlesse a posthumous rumor purposely raised to make the Great Ones of that Raigne distastefull to the succeeding times. Howsoever it were, the Nobility vnderstanding by the Physitions, that the King's estate was desperate, began every one to proiect his owne ends. The Duke of *Northumberland* as he was more potent than the rest, so did his ambition fly higher. It was somewhat strange, that being not any way able to pretend but a shadow of Right to the Crowne, he should dreame of confirming the Succession of it in his Family. But he shall soare so high, that he shall singe his wings, and fall no lesse dangerously than he whome the Poëts feigne to have aspired to a like vnlawfull government. As for the Ladies MARY and ELIZA-

*The King
sickeneth.*

1553.

BETH, two obstacles to be removed, he doubted not by reasons drawne from their questionable Births to exclude them. The next regard must be of the Daughters of HENRY the Seventh. But of the Queene of Scots (who was Niepce to MARGARET the eldest Daughter of HENRY the Seventh) he was little sollicitous: For by reason of our continuall enmity with the Scots, and thence inveterate hatred, he imagined that any shew of reason would put her by, especially shee being contracted to the French, whose insolent government hee was confident the English would never brooke. In the next place consideration is to be had of Lady FRANCIS Daughter to CHARLES BRANDON Duke of Suffolke by MARY Dowager of France the second Daughter of HENRY the Seventh, who, her two Brothers then alive, had beene married to HENRY GRAY Marquis of Dorset. The two Brothers (as before) dying of the late mortality, the Marquis is in the right of his Wife created Duke of Suffolke; and this was another stop to his Ambition. For the removall whereof he intends this course: He imparts his designs to the Duke of Suffolke, and desires that a Match may be concluded betweene the Lord GUILFORD DUDLEY his fourth Sonne, and Lady IANE GREY the Duke of Suffolke's eldest Daughter. And because, if onely right of inheritance should be pretended, the Duchesse of Suffolke were in reason to be preferred before her Daughter; he vndertakes to persuade the King not only to disherit his Sisters by Will and Testament, but also by the same to declare the Lady IANE his next and immediate Successor. Suffolke biting at this bait, they complot by drawing the chieftest of the Nobility

1553.

Nobility, to contract Affinity either with the one or tother to procure the generall assent of them all. So on the same day that Lady IANNE vnder anvnhappy Planet was married to Lord GVILFORD, the Duke of Suffolk's two youngest Daughters are married, CATHARINE to Lord HENRY eldest sonne to the Earle of Pembroke, and crouch backed MARY to MARTIN KEYES Groome Porter. Northumberland's eldest Daughter also named CATHARINE was married to the Lord HASTINGS eldest sonne to the Earle of Huntington. These marriages were in Iune solemnized at London, the King at that time extremely languishing.

Having thus brought these things to a desired passe, nothing now remained but to act his part with the weake King. To Him he inculcates, *In what danger the estate of the Church would be, if He dying, provision were not first made of a pious Successour, and such a one as should maintaine the now established Religion.* How the Lady MARY stood affected was well knowne. Of the Lady ELIZABETH there might be peradventure better hopes. But their causes were so strongly connexed, that either both must be excluded, or the Lady MARY be admitted. That it was the part of a religious and good Prince to set apart all respects of Bloud, where Gods Glory and the Subiects weale might be endangered. They that should do otherwise, were after this life (which is short) to expect revenge at Gods dreadfull Tribunall, where they are to vndergo the tryall either of eternall life or eternall death. That the Duke of Suffolke, had three Daughters neereſt to him in degrees of Bloud: they were such as their Vertues and Birth did commend, and from whome the violation of Religion, or the danger of a forraine yoke by any match was not to be feared,

1553.

feared, forasmuch as their education had beene Religious, they had as it were with their milke suckt in the spirituall food of true Christian Doctrine, and were also matched to Husbands as zealous of the Truth as themselves; He could wish and would advise, that these might be successively called to the Crowne, but with this caution, That they should maintaine the now established Religion. And although Lady IANE the eldest of the three were married to his Sonne; he would be content that they should be bound by oath to performe whatsoever his Maiesty should decree: for he had not so much regard to his owne as the generall good.

His Will,
wherin he
disinheriteth his
Sisters.

These reasons so prevailed with the young King, that he made his Will, and therein as much as in him lay, excluded both his Sisters from the Succession to the Crowne, and all others whosoever, beside the Duke of Suffolke's Daughters. This Will was read in presence of the Counsaile and the chiefe Iudges of the Realme, and by each of them confirmed, with a strict command that no man should publish the contents of it, least it might prove an occasion of sedition and civill tumults. The Archbishop CRANMER did for a while refuse to subscribe to it, not deeming it any way agreeable to equity, that the right of lawfull Succession should vpon any pretences be violated: But the King vrging him, and making Religion a motive, which was otherwise likely to suffer, after a long de^{ce}ption he was at length drawne to assent. But these delaies of his were so little regarded by Queene MARY, that vnder her scarce any man was sooner marked out for destruction. Some few daies after these passages, on the sixt of Iuly in the sixteenth yeare of his age King EDWARD at Greenwich surrendred his soule to God, having vnder his Tutors reigned six
yeares

He dieth.

yeares, five moneths, and nineteene daies, and even in that tender age given great prooffe of his vertue; a Prince of great devotion, constancy of minde, love of the Truth, and incredibly studious; vertues which with Royall Greatnesse seldome concur. Some three howers before his death, not thinking any one had beene present to over-heare him, he thus commended himselfe to God:

1553.

O Lord God, free me I beseech thee out of this miserable and calamitous life, and receive me among the number of thine Elect, if so be it be thy pleasure: although not mine but thy will be done. To thee O Lord do I commend my Spirit. Thou knowest O Lord how happy I shall be, may I live with thee in Heaven: yet would I might live and be well for thine Elects sake, that I might faithfully serve thee. O Lord God, blesse thy People, and save thine Inheritance. O Lord God, save thy people of England, defend this Kingdome from Popery, and preserve thy true Religion in it, that I and my People may blesse thy most Holy Name for thy Sonne I E S U S C H R I S T.

His Prayer.

Then opening his eyes, which he had hitherto closed, and seeing Doctor OWEN the Physitian, (from whose report we have this Prayer) sitting by, *Are you there?* (quoth he) *I had not thought you had been soneere:* who answered, *I heard you speake, but could not collect your words:* *Indeed* (replied the King) *I was making my prayer to God.* A little after, he suddenly cried

1553.

Cardanus
Lib. de Ge-
nituris.

cried out, *I faint, Lord have mercy vpon me, and receiue my Soule*: which words he had scarce spoken ere hee departed. Much might be spoken in praise of this Prince, but regardfull of my intended brevity, I will only give you a taste of him out of *CARDAN*, who about a yeare before travailing through England toward Scotland, was admitted to his presence. The conference betweene them he thus describeth. *Aderant illi* (speaking of the King) *Gratie: Linguas enim multas callebat puer, &c.* He was stored with Graces: for being yet a Childe he spake many Languages, his native English, Latine, French, and as I heare, was also skilled in the Greeke, Italian, Spanish, and peradventure some others. He wanted neither the rudiments of Logicke, the principles of Philosophy, nor Musicke: He was full of Humanity the relish of Morality, of Gravity besitting Royalty, of hopes great as himselfe: A Childe of so great wit, and such expectation could not be borne, without a kinde of miracle in nature. I write not this Rhetorically with the excesse of an Hyperbole; for to speake all the truth were to speake far more. Being yet but in his fifteenth yeare, he spake Latine as readily and politely as I could. What (saith he) is the subiect of your Bookes *De Rerum Varietate*? (I had dedicated them to his Maiesty) *CARD.* In the first Chapter I shew the long hidden and vainly sought after causes of Comets. *KING.* And what is the cause? *CARD.* The concourse and meeting of the lights of the erratique Stars. *KING.* But being the Planets are moved with severall motions, how comes it to passe, that the Comet doth not either presently dissolve and scatter, or move with their motion? *CARD.* It moves indeed, but with a far swifter motion then the Planets, by reason of the diversity of the aspect, as we see in Chrysell and the Sunne when a Rainebow rebound vpon a wall, for a little change makes a great difference of the place. *KING.* But how can that be done with-
out

1553.

out a subiect? for the wall is the subiect to the Rainbow.
 CARD. As in the Galaxia or Milky way, and in the
 reflection of lights when many candles lighted are set neere
 one another, they do produce a certaine lucid and bright
 meane. You may know the Lion by his paw, as they say.
 For his ingenuous nature and sweet conditions he was great
 in the expectation of all either good or learned men. He
 began to favour learning before he could know it, and knew
 it before he knew what vse to make of it. O how true is
 that saying,

Immodicis brevis est etas, & rara senectus:

Immoderate growths short liv'd are, aged feld.

He could give you only a taste of his Vertue, not an exam-
 ple. When occasion required a Maiestique gravity, you
 should see him act an old man: in his affability and mildnesse
 he shewed his age. He plaied on the Lute, accustomed him-
 selfe to publique affaires, was liberally disposed, &c. So
 much CARDAN. His Corps was on the ninth of
 August with no very great pompe interred at West-
 minster neere to his Grandfather HENRY the
 Seventh.

And here had I with this King's death conclu-
 ded this second Part, had not the consideration of
 a memorable enterprise of this Kings occurred. To
 SEBASTIAN CABOTA a Portugall, for his ad-
 mirable skill in Cosmography and the art of Navigation,
 hee allowed an annuity of an hundred sixty six
 pounds. EDWARD by this CABOTA's persuasi-
 on on the twelfth of May set forth three ships vnder
 Sir HUGH WILLOUGHBEY for the discovery
 of vnknowne Regions in the North parts of the
 world. The maine hope of this voiage was, that way
 to open a shorter passage to those vast Countries of
 the

1553.

Sir Hugh
Willoughby
frozen to
death.

Commerce
with the
Muscovite.

the East, Catay and China. Neere vpon the coast of Norway these Ships were so severed by tempest, that they never met againe. One of these great Ships terrified with the greatnes of irresistible dangers, quickly returned home. Sir HUGH WILLOUGHBY arrived at last at a Countrey vnder the Latitude of seventy foure degrees, not inhabited, hitherto to vs vnknowne, and was forced to winter there, where he & all his company were frozen to death. The Ship was afterward found by some the like English Adventures, and in his Deske a writing relating the adventures of each day, his Will also, by which it appeared that he lived vntill January. RICHARD CHANCELLER with the third Ship making a more prosperous voyage, after many dangers and incertainties arrived at last among the Russes and Muscovites. To these parts some few yeares after he made a second voyage: but in his returne suffered wracke on the Scottish coast, where seeking to save the Muscovite Embassador, he himselfe was drowned. Howsoever he were vnfortunate, he opened a rich veine of traffique to succeeding times, wherby we have an exact discovery of that Countrey, and of the Manners of those Heathen Christians.

FINIS.



From a drawing by

Published as the Act directs Oct. 2, 1802, by J. Stratford N^o 11 Holborn Hill.

A. R. Warren Sculp.

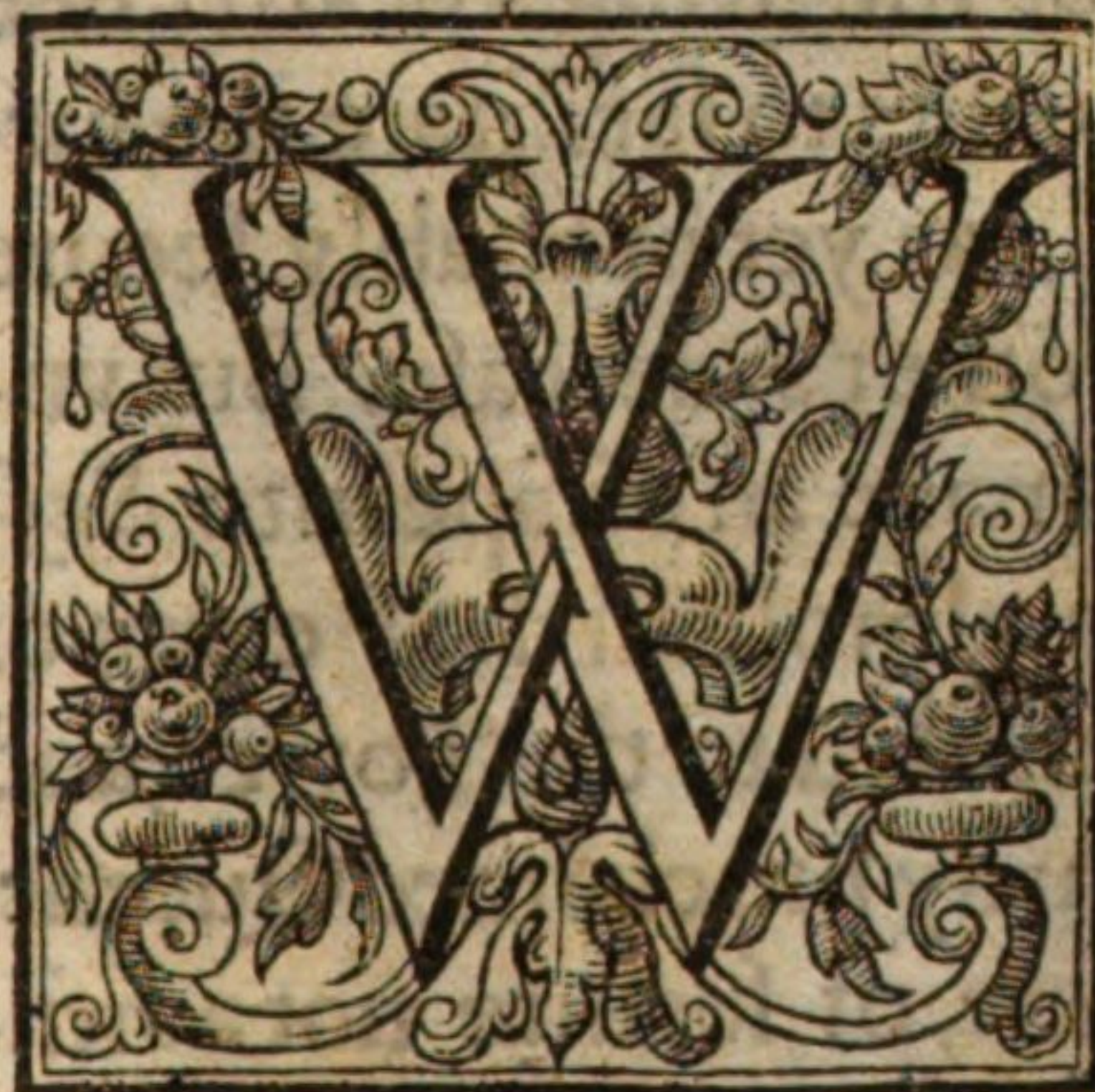


ANNALES OF ENGLAND.

The third Booke.

Queene MARY.

Anno Dom. 1553. Reg. 1.



When the Lady MARY, long since acquainted with Northumberland's secret practices, was also certified of her Brother's decease; not thinking it safe to abide neere London, where her Enemies were in their full strength; pretending a feare of the Plague by reason of the suspitious death of one of her household, she sudainly departed from Saint Edmundsbury, and came in one day to Framingham Castle in

Ll 2

Suf-

1553.

*Lady Mary
flies into Suf-
folke.*

1553.

Suffolke, distant from *London* fourescore miles, and seated neere the Sea, from whence if Fortune frowned on her, shee might make an easie escape into *France*. Here she tooke vpon her the Title of *Queene*, and by letters to her Friends, and the Nobles, wished their speedy repaire vnto Her.

In the meane time *Northumberland* having for two dayes together consulted with his friends concerning the managing of this great businesse, the King's death being not yet published, sent command to the Lord Maier of *London*, to repaire forthwith to *Greenwich* with six Aldermen, and twelve other Citizens of chiefest account. To them he declares the King's deparrure, and the seating of Lady *IANE* in the Throne of Sovereignty, shewing withall the King's Testament vnder Scale, which did import no lesse then the settling the Succession on her and that Family: He causeth them either by terrour or promises to sweare Allegiance to Lady *IANE*, with command, and that vnder a great penalty, that they should not as yet divulge these secret passages. What a furtherance it might be to his affaires if he could assure himselfe of this Citie, hee was too wise to be ignorant of: and as for suppressing the report of the King's death; hee thought it might prove a meanes to facilitate the surprisall of the Lady *MARY*, as yet probably secure for lacke of notice of her Brother's decease. But vnderstanding that shee had made an escape into *Suffolke*; Lady *IANE* was by almost all the Peeres of the Realme pompously conducted to the Tower, and with great solemnity publicely proclaimed *Queene*. Shee was of age about sixteene, of feature not admirable but handsome, incredibly learned, very quick-witted, and wise both beyond her Sexe and above her Age, wonderfully devoted to purity of Doctrine, and so far from desire of this advancement, that shee be-

*Lady Iane
proclaimed
Queene.*

1553.

began not to act her part of Royalty without teares, manifesting it to the world, that she was forced by her parents and friends ambition to this high but dangerous ascent. At her going through the Citie toward the Tower, the concourse of the People was great, their acclamations few, as if the strangeness of some new spectacle had drawne them together, rather then any intent of gratulation. Which Queene MARYES (for so we must henceforth call her) friends hitherto distrustfull more of successe then the cause, accepted of as an happy omen, and were encouraged to assist her as occasion should invite them. But the presence of Northumberland a man quicke, watchfull, and very politique, was yet a remora to their proceedings: Him they must send farther of, or be content to sit still.

The same day that Lady IANE entred the Tower letters sent from Queene MARY are read openly at Counsaile Table, wherein she commands the Lords to repaire to her, as being the next in Succession to the Crowne, and that they at last should take example from the generall votes of the Kingdome, shee being now every where acknowledged the lawfull Sovereigne. And indeed the Norfolke and Suffolke men were become hers; and the wiser sort did easily discern, that the affections of the people were hers. Wherefore it was thought at first expedient speedily to levie an Armie, and that, while yet the hearts of the people were free from any impression, and their minds yet equally poised in the ballance of irresolution, were either way to be swayed: By this course they might be peradventure too strong for the Queene, and preventing her plea by Armes, force her to plead more necessarily for her life. And an Army was raised, whereof the Duke of Suffolke was appointed Generall.

But

1553.

Northum-
berland for-
ced to be Ge-
nerall.

But the fauours of MARYES cause, whose maine proiect was to remove that grand obstacle the Duke of *Northumberland*, slyly insinuating themselves with Ladie IANE, perswaded her not to part with her Father, but to dispatch *Northumberland* for this imployment, the very terrour of whose name (his late victorie over the *Norfolke* Rebels being yet fresh in memorie) would effect more, then the other could either by policie or armes: And indeed to whose trust could a daughter be better committed then to her Fathers? As for the Citie, the Faith and wonted Wisdome of the Counsaile now with her, would containe it in obedience, and worke it to her best advantages. Shee poore Lady swaied with these reasons, earnestly beseeched *Northumberland* himselfe to vndergo this burthen, who at length though vnwillingly consented. His chiefe feare was, least the advantage of his absence might incourage opposite practisers to raise some tumults: But finding either excuses or absolute denials no way available, he prepares himselfe for this expedition, and on the thirteenth of *Iuly* sets forth from *London*, with an Army of six thousand. At his departure it is reported hee should say to the Lord GRAY of *Wilton* who then accompanied him, *Do you see (my Lord) what a conflux of people here is drawne together to see vs march? And yet of all this multitude, you heare not so much as one that wisheth vs successe.* The *Londoners* stood very well affected in point of Religion, so did also for the most part the *Suffolke* and the *Norfolke* men, and they knew MARY to be absolute for Popery. But the *English* are in their due respects to their Prince so loyally constant, that no regards, no not pretext of Religion, can alienate their affections from their lawfull Soveraigne, whereof the miserable case of Ladie IANE will anon give a memorable example. For although her Faction had laid a strong foundation

1553.

dation, and as may appeare by the premises, had most artificially raised their superstructure; yet as soone as the true & vndoubted Heire did but manifest her resolution to vindicate her Right, this accurate pile presently fell, and dissolved as it were in the twinckling of an eye, and that chiefly by their ind-vour, of whom for their Religions sake Ladie IANE might have presumed her selfe assured. Neither were the people made any thing the more inclinable by publikely impugning Queene MARYES Right in the Pulpit, a course wherein Northmumberland ingaged many a Preacher. Nay, even in the City of London, that learned and godly Prelate NICHOLAS RIDLEY vpon the deprivation of BONER consecrated Bishop of London (who I wish had not erred in this matter) was scarce heard out with patience. As for Queene MARY, if that Rule of the Civilians bee not true, that
** Matrimony contracted without any conceived impediment, although it after chance to be dissolved as vnlawfull, is of such force, that the Children begotten in such wedlocke are to be accounted lawfull:* yet why they should seeke to exclude the Ladie ELIZABETH, I cannot but wonder, neither can I thinke that any probable reason therefore could be yeilded by them, who deemed Queene MARY illegitimate. To let passe also in the meane time MARY Queene of Scots, to whom without doubt, the Issue of HENRY the Eighth being extinct, the Crowne properly belonged. Whatsoever the reasons vrged by these Preachers were, they were so farre from making any impression in the mindes of the People, that they every where flocked abundantly to Queene MARY: and this not out of a vulgar levity, many of the Nobility and other prime men having followed her partie even from the beginning; such were the Earles of Bathe and Suffex, the Heires of the Lords WHARTON and MORDANT,
 Sir

** L. quia provincia §. Divus ff. de Rit. Nupt. L. a. c. de Incest. Nupt. & Gloss. ibid. c. cum inter. & c. ex tenore. Extr. qui fil. sint legit.*

1553.

Sir WILLIAM DRVRY, Sir JOHN SHELTON, Sir HENRY BEDINGFIELD, Sir HENRY IERNEGAM, SYLBERD, FRESTON, and others. But above all Sir EDWARD HASTINGS brother to the Earle of *Huntingdon* was most famous, who having Commission from the Duke of *Northumberland* to raise foure thousand Foot, after hee had levied them, revolted to Queene MARY: For which act she afterward created him Baron of *Lowborough*, honouring also Sir JOHN WILLIAMS with another Baronie, as a reward of his faithfull service. And Sericant MORGAN not comming short of these in his devoir, became afterward one of the chiefe Judges of the Realme.

But an vnexpected accident did most advantage Queene MARYES affaires. Six ships had *Northumberland* set forth on that part of the Kingdome, where it is confined with the *German Ocean*, that he might intercept the Queene, if shee sought to make an escape, and to have them readie for all occasions. These ships were then by tempest driven in at *Yarmouth*, when in the Towne there was a presse of souldiers for the Queene. The mariners and souldiers induced partly by threats, partly by intreatie, yeild the ships to Sir HENRY IERNEGAM for Queene MARYES vse, and associate themselves with the new raised companies. This was to her a matter of great consequence, and that such she deemed it, her ioy well testified. And now encouraged with these accessions of men, ordnance, and munition, shee feared not *Northumberland*, and resolved not so much her owne defence, as the speedie suppression of her Competitrix.

The Lords who had hitherto adhered to Ladie IANE were somewhat terrified with this adverse accident. And the Queenes friends living at Court who

1553.

who had reserved themselves for opportunity and were as yet concealed, were now so imboldened as to reveale themselves to each other, desiring nothing more then that being set at liberty (for yet the Tower was the Court) they might but gaine entrance into the Citie, that they might more freely discover themselves. But they must either make the way, or be content to pray only for her, whom they could not otherwise advantage. It happened that *Northumberland* had written for more aides. At his setting forth he was, besides his foure sonnes, accompanied with the Marquis of *Northampton*, the Earle of *Huntingdon*, the Lord GRAY, and many other persons of note: and had when he came to *Cambridge* an Armie consisting of eight thousand Foot and two thousand Horse. Removing thence toward *Saint Edmonsbury*, hee found that many of his souldiers had forsaken their Colours, and was wonderfully iealous least of the remainder many would doe the like. Wherefore returning to *Cambridge*, hee plied the Lords of the Counsaile with continuall demands of supplies to fill his companies growne thinne by the departure of so many fugitives. The Lords that favoured MARIES cause laying hold on this occasion, obsequiously tending their services for the furtherance of the Dukes designs, decree speedie aides for him; but pretend, that it were dangerous to imploy any other in these levies, then such of whose loyalty they might rest assured, least the like treacherie might be committed as had beene already by Sir EDWARD HASTINGS; and profer themselves for the execution of this affaire. So by the Duke of *Suffolke* his permission they all let loose as it were out of prison, disperse themselves over the Citie. The chieft of them that were resolved for the Queene, were the Marquis of *Winchester* Lord Treasurer, the Earle of *Pembroke*, the Earle of *Arun-*

Northumberland forsaken by his souldiers.

1553.

dell (whom after a yeares imprisonment with the Lord PAGE, the Duke of Northumberland had lately set at liberty) and Sir THOMAS CHEYNEY Lord Warden of the *Cinque Ports*. By the industry of these, as many of the Lords of the Counsaile as were within call (excepting the Duke of Suffolke) and as many other of the Nobilitie as were knowne to be at least not enemies to Queene MARYES cause, had a meeting at *Bainards Castle*, vnder pretence of conference with the *French Embassadour LAVAL*, about I know not what important businesse: But indeed to consult of a meane how to reduce Ladie IANE to her first originall of a private fortune. There HENRY Earle of *Arundell* bitterly inveighing against the Duke of Northumberland, after he had ripped vp the acts of former times, and burthened him with all that had beene done vniustly, cruelly, or amisse in the Raigne of King EDWARD; hee at last comes to that treacherous act of the disherison of the Children of HENRY the Eighth, professing that hee wondred how he had so intbralled such personages (intimating those Nobles present) as to make them instruments of his wickednesse: For by their consent and suffrages it came to passe, that the Duke of Suffolkes Daughter, the same Northumberland's Daughter in Law, did now personate a Queene, the grosse and power of Soveraignetie remaining indeed with Northumberland, that hee might freely wreake his tyranny on their lives and fortunes. Religion is indeed the thing pretended: But suppose wee haue no regard to these Apostolicall Rules, Evill must not be done that good may come thereof, and wee must obey even evill Princes not for feare, but for conscience sake, yet how doth it appeare, that MARY intends any alteration in Religion? Certainly having beene lately petitioned vnto in this point by the Suffolke men, She gave them (and that was true) a very hopefull answer. And what a

mad

1553.

mad blindnesse it is, for the avoidance of an vncertaine danger, to presipitate our selves into most certaine destruction? I would we had not erred in this kind. But errors past cannot be recalled, some may peradventure be amended, wherein speedy execution oftentimes happily supplieth former defects. Recollect your selves then, and so make vse of your authority, that MARY the vndoubtedly lawfull Heire may be publicquely proclaimed. After hee had spoken to this purpose, the Earle of Pembroke readily and generously professed that hee subscribed to the Earle of Arundel's motion, and grasping his sword, signified his resolution to maintaine the right of MARY against all opposers. The rest take after them, and decree the same. So commanding the repaire of the Lord Maior and the rest of the Aldermen, they in Cheapside proclaime Ladie MARY Queene, with addition also of the title of Supreme Head of the Church. And to adde more maiesty to their act by some devout solemnitie, they go in Procession to Pauls singing that admirable hymne of those holy Fathers Saint AMBROSE and Saint AVGVSTINE, commonly knowne by its first words, *Te Deum*. Then they dispatcht away some companies to seize on the Tower, and command the Duke of Suffolke to render himselfe. The Duke as easily deiected at the newes, as he had formerly beene elevated by vaine hope, entering his Daughters chamber, forbad the farther vse of Royall ceremonies, wishing her to be content with her returne to a private fortune. Whereto shee answered with a setled countenance: Sir, I better brooke this message, then my forced advancement to Royalty; out of obedience to you and my mother I have grievously sinned, and offred violence to my selfe: now I do willingly, and as obeying the motions of my soule, relinquish the Crowne, and indeavour to salve those faults committed by others, if at least so great an error may be salved by a wil-

The Lords
resolue for
Queene
Mary,

And to sup-
presse Lady
lane.

1553.

Northum-
berland pro-
claimes Ma-
ry Queene
at Cam-
bridge.

ling relinquishment and ingenuous acknowledgement. Having spoken thus much, shee retired into a withdrawing roome, more troubled at the danger she had incurred, then the defeasance of so great hopes. The Duke himselfe presently repaired to the rest of the Counsaile, and subscribed to their Decree. This Proclamation was on the nineteenth of *Iuly* published, and entertained with such acclamations, that no part of it could be heard, after the first mention of Queene *MARYES* name. The Earle of *Arundell* and the Lord *PAGET* having thus ordered this waightie affaire, accompanied with thirty horse, rid post that night vnto the Queene, to certifie her of the glad-some tidings of her subiects loyall intentions.

In the meane time the Lords of the Counsaile certifie *Northumberland* of these passages, commanding him withall to subscribe to the Decree, and dismisse his Army. But hee out of the presage of his owne fortune had before the receipt of their letters proclaimed her Queene at *Cambridge*, where in a counterfait ioy he threw vp his Cap with the sincerer multitude. Then hee cashiered the rest of his waving companies, and almost all the Lords, who had hitherto followed him, with a legall revolt passing over to the Queene, and making *Northumberland* the sole author and cause of these disloyall distractions, were vpon their submission pardoned.

Ladie *IANE*, having as on a Stage for ten dayes only personated a Queene, was committed to safe custodie, and the Ladies who had hitherto attended her, were commanded each to their homes. The Duke of *Northumberland* was by the Queenes command apprehended by the Earle of *Arundell*, and committed to the Tower. The manner of his taking is reported to have beene thus: After so many checkes vncertaine what course to take, resolved to flie, but not knowing whe-

1553.

whether, the Pensioners (who with their Captaine Sir I O H N G A T E S had followed him in this expedition) while he was pulling on his boots, seized on him, saying, that it was fit they should excuse themselves from the imputation of treason by his testimony. The Duke withstanding them, and the matter being likely to grow to blowes, at the very instant came those letters from the Counsaile, which commanded them all to lay aside their armes, and peaceably to repaire to their homes. These letters tooke vp the matter, and set the Duke at liberty, which notwithstanding lasted not long. For the next morning, as he was readie to take horse, the Earle of *Arundell* intercepted him, and with him apprehended the Earle of *Huntingdon*, the Earle of *Warwicke* Northumberland's eldest sonne, and two others younger Lord A M B R O S E and Lord H E N R Y D V D L E Y, Sir A N D R E W D V D L E Y the Duke's brother, Sir T H O M A S P A L M E R, Sir I O H N G A T E S, his brother H E N R Y G A T E S and Doctour E D W I N S A N D S, who on the five and twentieth of *Iuly* were brought to *London*, and presently committed to the Tower. The Earle of *Huntingdon* was, not long after, set at liberty, but his sonne was presently. Sir I O H N G A T E S, whom *Northumberland* accused to have beene the contriver of all this mischief, and Sir T H O M A S P A L M E R were after executed. The Earle of *Warwicke* died in prison. The Lords A M B R O S E and H E N R Y D V D L E Y were pardoned. H E N R Y was afterward slaine with a shot at the siege of *S. Quintin*; but A M B R O S E finding fortune more propitious, out-lived M A R Y, and by Queene E L I Z A B E T H created Earle of *Warwicke*, long flourished in the happinesse of her favour. Sir A N D R E W D V D L E Y after his condemnation was also pardoned. Doctour S A N D S being then Vice-chancellour of the Vniversitie of *Cambridge* had

Northumberland, and some other Lords taken.

1553.

had by *Northumberland's* command in the Pulpit publicly impugned Queene *MARYE'S* cause, and defended that of Ladie *IANE*; but with that wisdom and moderation, although vpon the short warning of some few howers, that hee abundantly satisfied the Duke, and yet did not so deeply incurre the displeasure of the aduerse part, but that his friends prevailed with the Queene for his pardon. So that after a yeares imprisonment he was set at libertie, and presently fled over into *Germany*: after the death of Queene *MARY* returning from his voluntary exile, hee was consecrated Bishop of *Worcester*, from which See he was translated to *London*, and thence againe to the Archbishopricke of *Yorke*: a man for his learning, vertue, wisdom, and extract very famous, but most especially happy in his Issue, whereof many were admirable for their indowments both internall and externall, and of whom wee have in our age scene three honoured with Knighthood.

On the six and twentieth of *Iuly*, the Marquis of *Northampton* (afterward condemned, and pardoned) Doctour *RIDLEY* Bishop of *London*, (who two yeares after was burned at *Oxford*) and beside many others, Lord *ROBERT DUDLEY* that great Earle of *Leicester* vnder Queene *ELIZABETH*, were brought to the Tower. On the seven and twentieth, the Duke of *Suffolke* (to whom the Queene with admirable clemency within foure dayes restored his libertie) Sir *JOHN CHEEKE* King *EDWARD'S* Schoolemaster, Sir *ROGER CHOLMELEY* chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, and Sir *EDMOND MOUNTAGVE* chiefe Iustice of the Common Pleas, were committed to the same place, who were all on the third of *September* set at libertie.

On the thirtieth of *Iuly* the Ladie *ELIZABETH* accompanied by a great traine of Nobles, Knights, Gen-

1553.

Gentlemen and Ladies (to the number of five hundred, some say a thousand) set forward from the Strand through London, and so to *Wansted*, towards the Queene to congratulate her happy successe in vindicating her right to the Crowne. Who on the third of *August* having dismissed her Army (which had not yet exceeded the number of 13000.) attended by all the Nobilitie made a triumphant entrance through London to the Tower, where the Duke of *Norfolke*, EDWARD COURTNEY sonne to the Marquis of *Excester* beheaded in the yeare 1538. GARDINER late Bishop of *Winchester*, and ANNE Duchesse of *Somerset* presented themselves on their knees, and GARDINER in the name of them all spake a congratulatory Oration; which ended, the Queene courteously raised them, and kissing each of them said, *These are all my owne prisoners*, and gave order for their present discharge. EDWARD COURTNEY she restored to his Fathers honours, making him Marquis of *Excester*. As for GARDINER, shee not only reseatd him in the Bishopricke of *Winchester*, but also on the three and twentieth of *August* made him Lord Chancellor of *England*, notwithstanding that he had not only subscribed to the Divorce from CATHARINE the Queenes Mother, but had published bookes, wherein hee had defended King HENRY's proceedings.

Queene Mary comes to London.

Gardiner made Lord Chancellor.

On the first of *August*, BONER and TONSTALL who had beene formerly deprived of their Bishopricks, the one of *London*, the other of *Duresme*, and shortly after DAY of *Chichester*, and HEATH of *Worcester* were enlarged and restored to their Bishopricks, the present Incumbents being without due proceffe of Law eiection.

Deprived Bishops restored.

On the tenth of *August*, were celebrated the Exequies of King EDWARD, DAY Bishop of *Chichester*

King Edward's Funerall.

1553.

Memor
of the
nobles

ordinar
the Lord
Bishop

The Duke
of Nor-
thumberland
the Earle of
Warwicke,
& the Mar-
quis of Nor-
thampton
condemned.

King Ed-
ward's Fe-
stivall

ster preaching, executing in English, and administring the Sacrament according to the manner and forme received in the Raigne of EDWARD. For as yet nothing had beene determined concerning any change in point of Religion. So that when BOWNE a Chanoin of Pauls (afterward Bishop of Bath & Wells) preaching at the Crosse, did inveigh against the Reformation in King EDWARD'S time, and did in vprobrating manner argue the iniustice of those times, which condemned BONE to perpetuall imprisonment for matter delivered by him in that place that time foure yeare, who was now by a more iust clemency restored to his libertie and dignitie: the people inured to the Protestant Religion, and could abstaine from stoning him, and one of them ayming a poniard at him, missed him very narrowly: the affections of the Assembly may by this be conceived, that during the Raigne of Queene MARY, the Authour of this bold attempt, notwithstanding the diligence of earnest inquisitors, could neuer be discovered. The uproare increasing, and divers pressing toward the Pulpit, BOWNE protected by two Protestant Preachers (BRADFORD and ROGERS, who were greatly revered by the people, and afterward burned for their Religion) was with great difficultie conveyed to the Schoole at Pauls.

And now at length on the eighteenth of August, the Duke of Norfolke sitting as high Steward of England, were the Duke of Northumberland, his sonne the Earle of Warwicke, and the Marquis of Northampton arraigned at Westminster: where the Duke of Northumberland pleading, that he had done nothing but by authority of the Counsaile, his plea being not admitted for sufficient, he was condemned of high Treason. The sentence being pronounced, he craved the favour of such a death as was vsually executed

1553.

cuted on Noblemen, and not the other: He beseeched also, that a favourable regard might be had of his children, in respect of their age: Thirdly, that hee might be permitted to confer with some learned Divine for the settling of his conscience: And lastly, that her Maiesty would be pleased to send vnto him foure of her Counsaile for the discovery of some things, which might concerne the Estate. The Marquis of *Northampton* pleaded to his inditement, that after the beginning of these tumults hee had forborne the execution of any publique office; and that all that while, intent to hunting and other sports, he did not partake in the conspiracie: But it being manifest, that he was party with the Duke of *Northumberland*, sentence passed on him likewise. The Earle of *Warwicke* finding that the Iudges in so great a cause admitted not excuse of age, with great resolution heard his condemnation pronounced, craving only this favour, that, whereas the goods of those who are condemned for treason, are totally confiscated, yet her Maiesty would be pleased, that out of them his debts might be discharged. After this, they were all againe returned to the Tower. The next day Sir ANDREW DUDLEY, Sir JOHN GATES (who was thought in *Northumberland's* favour to have projected the adoption of Lady IANE) Sir HENRY GATES, and Sir THOMAS PALMER were likewise condemned. On the two and twentieth of the same moneth, the Duke with the rest (having two daies before received the Sacrament of the Lords Supper) were conducted to the place of execution: where *Northumberland* (saith that excellent Historiographer, THYANVS) by the persuasion of NICHOLAS HEATH (afterward Bishop of *Yorke*) making his owne funcrall Oration to the people, acknowledged himselfe guilty, and craving pardon for his vnseasonable ambition, admonished

The Duke of Northumberland beheaded.

1553.

the Assembly, That they should embrace the Religion of their forefathers reiecting that of later date, which had occasioned all the miseries of the forepassed thirty yeares: and for prevention for the future, if they desired to present their soules vnsported to God, and were truly affected to their Countrey, they should expell those trumpets of sedition, the Preachers of the Reformed Religion: As for himselfe, whatsoever he might pretend, his conscience was fraught with the Religion of his Fathers, and for testimony hereof he appealed to his great friend the Bishop of Winchester: but being blinded with ambition, hee had beene contented to make a racke of his conscience by temporizing, for which hee professed himselfe sincerely repentant, and acknowledged the desert of his death. Having spoken thus much, he craved the charitable devotions of the Assembly, & commending his soule to God, prepared his body for the stroake of the axe. This recantation did variously affect the mindes of the multitude, who wondred that he should at last apostatize from that Religion, which he had for sixteene yeares professed, and in favour whereof chiefly, he perswaded King EDWARD to endeavour the exclusion of his Sisters from their lawfull Succession. Some write, that being desirous of life, hee did it craftily out of hope of impunity: but that hope being frustrated, to have repented it afterwards. He was suspected (neither were the presumptions small) to have administred a poisonous potion to King EDWARD: but in his Inditement there was no mention of it, and that the rather, for that the Iudges had authority only to inflict punishment on him for his conspiracy against the Queene. At the same time and place were also executed Sir JOHN GATES and Sir THOMAS PALMER.

Bishops imprisoned.

Many Bishops also, who were thought to have beene too too opinionate in point of Religion, were sent for to London, and there imprisoned, viz, HOO-

PER

1554.

PER of *Glocester*, FARRAR of Saint *Davies* (who were both crowned with martyrdom) and COVERDALE of *Excester*, who at the request of CHRISTIAN the third King of *Denmarke* was pardoned. But the Clergy of what ranke soever, who would not forsake their wives, or were invested in Livings, whereof any one had been for defence of Popery deprived, or that would not by oath promise the defence of the *Romish* Religion, were generally forced to relinquish their Benefices.

PETER MARTYR was then Professor at *Oxford*, who presently vpon the death of King EDMUND, was confined to his house. But after some time his friends so far prevailed, that he might come to *London*, where he betooke himselfe to his Patron the Archbishop of *Canterbury*. But hee could not prove a Sanctuary to him. The Archbishop himselfe began now to totter. The Queene, beside that shee was wholly swayed by GARDINER, who extremely hated him, had resolved to wreake her selfe on him for the Divorce of her Mother.

Peter Martyr

----- *Manet altā mente repostum*

Iudicium latum, spretæq; iniuria Matris.

It is reported, that King HENRY having determined to punish his Daughter the Lady MARY with imprisonment for her contumacy, was by the sole intercession of CRANMER diverted from his resolutions: And when she was by her Brother King EDMUND to be disinherited, the Archbishop made a long suasive Oration to the contrary; neither could he be induced to subscribe to the Decree, vntill the Iudges of the Realme generally affirming, that it might lawfully be done, the dying King with much importunitie prevailed with him. In ingratefull persons the conceit (I will not say the feeling) of one iniurie makes deeper impression, then can the remembrance of

1553.

The Archbishop Cranmer, Lady Iane, Lord Guilford & Lord Ambrose Dudley condemned.

a thousand reall benefits. It was now bruited, that with his fortune CRANMER had also changed his Religion, inſomuch that to gratifie the Queene, hee had promiſed to celebrate the Exequies of the deceased King after the *Romiſh* manner. To cleere himſelfe of this imputation, hee by writing declares himſelfe ready to maintaine the Articles of Religion ſet forth by his meanes vnder King EDWARD his Raigne, to be conſonant to the Word of God and the Doctrine of the Apoſtles: in which reſolution he being confirmed by PETER MARTYR, required him for his Second in this religious Duell. But words are not regarded where violence is intended. His death was abſolutely determined; but how it might be fairely contrived, was not yet reſolved. Firſt therefore they deale with him as a Traitor. And having for ſome while continued priſoner in the Tower, to alienate the minds of the people who held him in high eſteeme, he is on the thirteenth of November together with the Lords AMBROSE and GUILFORD DUDLEY, and Lady IANE, condemned for treaſon. But the machinators of this miſchiefe againſt CRANMER were ſo aſhamed of their ſhadowleſſe indeavour, that they themſelves became interceſſors for his pardon, and yet afterwards moſt irreligious procured him to be burned for pretended hereſie. Before hee was committed to cuſtodie, his friends perſuaded him, after the example of ſome other of his religious Brethren, who had long ſince eſcaped into *Germany*, by flight to withdraw himſelfe from aſſured deſtruction: to whom hee answered; *Were I accuſed of theſt, parricide, or ſome other crime, although I were innocent, I might peradventure be induced to ſhift for my ſelfe: But being queſtioned for my allegiance not to men, but to God, the truth of whoſe holy Word is to be aſſerted againſt the errours of Popery; I have at this time, with a conſtancie beſitting a Chriſtian Prelate,*
reſolved

1553.

resolved rather to leave my life, then the Kingdome. But we will now leave CRANMER in Prison, whose farther troubles and martyrdome wee will in their due places relate. Concerning PETER MARTYR, it was long controverted at the Counsaile Table whether, having so much prejudiced the Catholique Religion, it were fit hee should be proceeded against as an heretique. But it was at length determined, that because hee came into England vpon publique assurance, hee should have libertie to depart with his Family. So having letters of passe signed by the Queene, hee was transported with his friend BERNARDINE OCHINVS, and came to *Antwerp*, from thence to *Colen*, at last to *Strasburg*, from whence hee first set forth for *England*.

In the meane time on the first of *October*, the Queene was with great pompe crowned at *Westminster* by STEPHEN GARDINER Bishop of *Winchester*, and that after the manner of her Ancestours.

The Coronation.

On the fift of the same moneth a Parliament is called at *Westminster*, wherein all the Lawes enacted against the Pope and his adherents by HENRY and EDWARD, were repealed. And in the Convocation house at the same time was a long and eager disputation concerning the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, the Prolocutor Doctour WESTON with many others maintaining CHRISTS Corporall real presence in the Sacrament: Among those few who sided with the Truth, were JOHN AILMER and RICHARD CHEYNEY (both by Queene ELIZABETH made Bishops, the one of *London*, the other of *Glocester*) JOHN PHILPOT Archdeacon of *Winchester*, who confirmed this doctrine with the testimony of his blood, JAMES HADDON Deane of *Excester*, and WALTER PHILIPS Deane of *Rochester*.

A Disputation in the Convocation house.

At

1554.

*Popery re-
stored.*

At length the Truth was oppressed by Multitude not Reason. Wherevpon the restitution of *Romish* rites is againe concluded, and on the one and twentieth of *December*, Masse beganne againe to bee celebrated throughout *England*.

The same day also the Marquis of *Northampton* and Sir *HENRY GATES* not long since condemned, were set at libertie and pardoned: And the Lords *AMBROSE* and *GVILFORD DUDLEY* with Lady *IANE* had their imprisonment more at large, with hope of pardon also.

Anno Dom. 1554. Reg. 1. & 2.

1554.

*The Queene
inclines to
marry.*

THe Queene, who was now thirty seuen yeares old, & hetherto thought averse from marriage, either in regard of her own natural inclination, or conscious to her selfe of the want of such beauty as might indeare a husband to her; her affaires so requiring, began at length to bethink her of an husband. She feared, least the consideration of her sexes imbecillity might bring her into contempt with her people, she being yet scarce settled in her throne, and the Kingdome still distracted in their affections to severall Competitors. Fame had destined three for her bed, *PHILIP* Infant of *Spaine* the Emperours Son, *Cardinall POOLE*, and the Marquis of *Excester*. The two last were proposed for their Royall descent, and the opinion of the loue of their Countrey, there being hope, that vnder them the freedome, and the priviledges of the Kingdome might be preserved inviolate. But besides proximity of Bloud in each of the three, *Cardinall POOLE* was much affected by the Queene, for his grauity, sanctimony, meeknesse, and wisdom, *COVRTNEY* for his flourishing youth, his

1554.

his courteous and pleasant disposition. But he I knew not how, was somewhat suspected, not to thinke sincerely of the late established Religion, but to haue fauored the Reformed. And the Cardinall being now in his fiftieth and third yeare, was deemed a little too old to be a father of children. But their opinion prevailed, as more necessary, who thought this vnsetled Kingdome would require a puissant King, who should be able to curbe the factious subiect, and by Sea and Land oppose the *Frentb* by the accrue of *Scot-land* become too neere neighbours and enemies to vs. Vpon these motives the ambitious Lady was easily induced to consent to a match with PHILIP. For the Treaty whereof the Emperour had about the end of the last yeare, sent on a grand Embassage LAMORALLE Count Egmond, with whom CHARLES Count Lalaine, and JOHN MONTMORENCY were ioyned in Commission. In *Ianuary* the Embassadors arrived at *London*, and in a few daies conclude the marriage, the Conditions whereof were these,

That matrimony being contracted betweene Philip and Mary, it should be lawfull for Philip to vsurpe the Titles of all the Kingdomes and Provinces belonging to his Wife, and should be ioint-Governour with her over those Kingdomes, the Priviledges and Customes thereof alwayes preserved inviolate, & the full and free distribution of Bishoprickes, Benefices, Favors, Offices alwayes remaining intire to the Queene. That the Queene likewise should be assumed into the society of all the Realmes, wherein Philip either then was, or should be afterward invested.
That

*The Articles of the
Queenes
marriage
with Philip
of Spaine.*

1554.

That if Shee survived Philip, sixty thousand pounds per annum, should be assigned for her iointure, as had beene formerly assigned to Lady Margaret Sister to Edward the Fourth and Widow to Charles Duke of Burgoigne, whereof forty thousand should be raised out of Spaine and Arragon, twenty thousand out of the Netherlands and the Provinces therto belonging. And to prevent all future iars and contentions about the division of the inheritance of the Kingdomes and Provinces which either then were or afterward should be belonging to either, it is agreed, That the Issue begotten by this marriage should succeed in all the Queenes Kingdomes and Dominions, and in all the Principalities of the Netherlands and Burgoigne, whereof the Emperour did stand possessed: That Charles the eldest Sonne to Philip by a former marriage should likewise succeed in all the Kingdomes as well of his Father, as of his Grandmother, and his Grandfather the Emperour, both in Italy and Spaine, and by reason thereof should stand obliged for the payment of the forementioned forty thousand pounds. If by this matrimony no other Issue shalbe begotten then Female, the Eldest shall succeed in all the Provinces of the Netherlands, but with this caution, that by the Counsaile and consent of her Brother Charles, she

1554.

she shall make choice of an Husband either out of England or the Netherlands; if she marrie from elsewhere without his consent, shee shall be deprived of her right of Succession, and Charles be invested therein. But to her and her Sisters a convenient Dowry shall be assigned according to the Lawes and Customes of the places. If it happen that Charles, or his Successours shall die without issue; in that case the first borne by this marriage, although it be a Female, shall succeed in all the Kingdomes belonging to both these Princes, as well of the Netherlands, as of Spaine, and in all the Principalities of Italy; and shall be bound to preserve inviolate all the Lawes, Priviledges, Immunities and Customes of each Kingdome. Betweene the Emperour, Philip, and his Heires, betweene the Queene, and her Children and Heires, and betweene both their Realmes and Dominions, constant Amity, Concord, a perpetuall and inviolable League shall be continued. This League, Agreement, and Articles shall be renewed and confirmed at Westminster the two and fortieth yeare of this * Seculum, and foure yeares after on the sixteenth of Ianuary at Vtrecht.

As soone as the Decree concerning these Nuptiall Compacts was divulged, many out of a restless disposition misliking the present times, but especially traducing the intent of this Accord, as if by it the Spa-

* which, as I conceive, would have fallen in the yeare 1588.

1554.

Sir Thomas
Wyats re-
bellion.

niard were to become absolute Lord of all, who should have the free managing of all affaires, and abolishing our ancient Lawes and Customes, would impose an intolerable yoke, as on a conquered Nation. This was the generall conceit of this Action. But in private, every one according to their divers humours did mutter diversly: some censuring the Queenes actions, others complaining of the change of Religion contrary to her promise made to the *Suffolke* men: some lamented the case of Lady IANE, who had beene forcibly deposed, and cruelly condemned to an ill-deserved death. Some were swaied by pittie, some by the regard of Religion, but most by the feare of a *Spanish* servitude: and others were by their owne hopes and the desire of change animated to a rebellion. A Chieftaine only was wanting, which defect was quickly supplied by Sir THOMAS WYAT a Knight of *Kent*. Who having communicated the matter with the Duke of *Suffolke*, Sir PETER CAROW of *Devonshire*, and some others, concluded that it would not be expedient to attempt any thing vntill the arrivall of PHILIP, that so they might not seeme to have taken Armes to any other end, then to secure their Countrey from the vsurpation of a foraine Prince. So reserving themselves for oportunity, they disperse themselves into severall places: WYAT into *Kent*, a countrey adioyning to *London*, and disioyned from *Calais* by a little fret of Sea; Sir PETER CAROW into *Devonshire*, a part of *England* in the West opposite to the maine of *France*; and the Duke of *Suffolke* withdrew himselfe to his place in *Warwickshire* situated in the very heart of the Realme. In these severall places, they secretly furnish themselves with armes, money, and all sorts of munition, and seeke to draw others to partake in the Conspiracie. Sir PETER CAROW, whether thrust on by his fate, or thin-

1554.

thinking delay would prove dangerous, began secretly to levie some forces in *Cornwall*, but the matter being sooner detected then was hoped, & he quickly oppressed, he presently tooke ship, & fled into *France*, where he lurked some time, vntill at length being seemingly reconciled to the King, he was taken at *Brussells*, and brought captive into *England*. By what meanes hee afterward made an escape I know not. But he flourished many yeares vnder Queene ELIZABETH, and died at *Rosse* in *Leinster* a Province of *Irland* in the yeare 1577. as appeareth by his monument in the Cothedrall Church at *Excester* erected at the costs of his nephew PETER, who was brother to GEORGE, whom King IAMES for his many vertues not long since created a Baron.

With Sir PETER at the same time Sir IOHN CHEEKE, who had beene King EDWARD'S Tutor, was also taken, who came from *Strasburg* towards *Brussells*, and that not without publique licence, vpon no other businesse, but to visit (as saith FOX) the Queenes Agents there, or rather according to THUANVS, to marry a wife. Whatsoever were the cause of his iourney, certaine it is that hee was intercepted, on the way from *Antwerp* to *Brussells* vnhorsed by some of the Queenes servants, and tied with cords to a cart, at last muffled, carried on ship-board, and conueied to the Tower at *London*, not knowing all the way for what part of the world hee was bound. There, having alwaies in conscience abhorred the errors of Popery, he was forced to abiure his Religion, for which hee afterward became so repentant, that out of extremitie of griefe he languished, and shortly died. These passages I doe the more exactly describe, because there want not some, who relate, that both Sir PETER CAROW, and Sir IOHN CHEEKE for their Religion suffered at a stake on

Sir Iohn
Cheeke is
taken and
dieth.

1554.

the thirteenth of *June* this present yeare.

But to returne to *W I A T*; he perceiving that his intents were divulged, and that hee had nothing to trust to, no refuge but valour; incited the people in *Kent* to a Rebellion, and (as Rebels never want common pretexts to colour their actions) that,

Because the Queene relying too much upon the advise of bad Counsailers, had lately done, and did daily indeavour many things preiudiciall to the Estate of the Realme: That therefore to prevent farther inconveniences, those Counsailers must be removed, and others substituted, who should so manage the Estate, as should answer the trust reposed in such men, whose loyalty should render them more carefull of the publique, then their private profit. But above all they must endeavour, that some meanes must be used to impeack this determined Match, by which hee plainly foresaw this free Realme would be oppressed with the miseries of a most lamentable servitude: and a floud-gate would be opened to let in a perpetuall current of Superstition: That the effects of their Armes would prove very profitable to the Queene (for whose happinesse he should ever pray) and to the general good of the Kingdome.

But howsoever hee fed the giddie multitude with specious words, the Duke of *Suffolke* at that time running the same courses in *Warwick-shire*, it was palpable

1554.

pable, that their drift was to depose MARY, and once more to inthronc captive IAN E.

By the five and twentieth of *Ianuary*, fame had filled *London* with the newes of this *Kentish* Rebellion. For the repression whereof, the Duke of *Norfolke* was the same day dispatched with some small forces, consisting for the most part of the *Queenes* Guard, which were a little increased by the accession of five hundred *Londoners*, who were the next day sent downe by water to *Gravesend*, where the Duke expected them. With these hee resolves to encounter *WIAT*, whom his madnesse had not yet carried beyond *Rocheſter*, which (notwithstanding its weaknesse being no way fortified) he intended to make good against the Duke, and had incamped within the ruines of the Castle.

Rocheſter is a Citie seated vpon the River *Medway*, where falling into the *Thames* it is most violent, ebbing and flowing like a straight, and is made passable by an arched stone bridge of excellent artifice. This bridge had the Rebels seized, and planted on it some brasse double Canons, that they might debar the Duke (whom they vnderstood by their Scouts to bee vpon march) of passage. But he nothing daunted with their proceedings sent a Herald to proclaime pardon to such as forsaking *WIAT*, should returne to their obedience, resolving withall to force the bridge and gaine entrance into the Citie. The Herald executed his office, but with so submisſe a voice, that hee was heard by few (for indeed a Pistoll held at his brest so terrified him, that hee was content for his owne safetie to yeild to the Rebels so commanding) and was returned with this answer, that they knew not themselves to be so far delinquent, as that they should need any such pardon. Only Sir *GEORGE HARPER* faining a revolt, made over toward the Duke of *Norfolke*, but indeed with intent to persuade *ALEXAN-*

DER

1554.

Bret with
500. Londoners
revolts
to Wyat.

DER BRET Captaine of those five hundred Londoners, to partake in this action of common disloyalty. Which he performed so effectually, that BRET, whose Company made the Vauntguard, before hee came so neere the bridge as to give an assault, suddenly drawing his sword turned about to his souldiers, and thus bespake them:

Valiant Countrymen, wee now ingage our selves in a cause, which before wee farther proceed, would require mature deliberation. We march, but against whom? Are they not our friends, our fellow-natives, with whom we seeke to make a deeper mixture of our blouds? Have they not taken armes for the preservation of the ancient glory of the English name, and to vindicate our common liberties against the insolencies of the cruell Spaniard? You whose degenerate spirits can brooke the indignities of servitude, continue in God's name with your brave Generall, who without doubt will deserve the service of such Worthies: As for mee (who had rather undergo many the most torturing deaths, then betray my liberty to the Spaniard) I here (happy and prosperous may it prove) inroll my selfe under VVyat's Colours, and am confident that some of you out of affection to your Countrey will follow my example.

Hee had scarce spoken thus much, when they all crying out a WYAT, a WYAT, turned their Cannon

1554.

non against their fellowes, who followed in the Rere. Which vnexpected revolt so terrified the Duke of Norfolk, the Earle of Arundell, and Sir HENRY IERNEGAM Captaine of the Guard, who followed the Duke in this expedition, that they instantly betooke themselves to flight. The remainder of that small Army prepared themselves according to the example of their Commanders, when WYAT with some horse intercepted their flight, & seased on eight brasle peeces withall the Dukes munition: then vsed he some perswasions to pervert their loyalty, professing withall, that if any one would be an instrument of his owne miserie by assisting the Queene, hee should have free licence to depart, desiring all such, that they would certifie all men, but especially her Maiestie, that WYAT calling God and men to witnesse did protest, that hee tooke not Armes any way to preiudice her, but to maintaine the liberties of his Countrey inuiolate against foraine machinations. The five hundred Londoners, many of the Guard, and the greatest part of the headlesse Army forth-with ioyne with WYAT, who now vpon confidence of his forces resolves to make speedily for London.

Whiles WYAT thus acts his part in Kent, the Duke of Suffolke, who with his brothers Lord IOHN and Lord LEONARD GRAY departed from London on the five and twentieth of Ianuary, did every where incite the people to take armes against the Spaniard. But finding, that this alarme tooke not, and knowing he had waded too far to hope for a second pardon, hee determined to indeavour an escape by flight. But the Earle of Huntingdon sent by the Queen with three hundred Horse to take him, made him alter his resolution. The Duke's company consisted not of above fifty, with which small number in a Coun-

The Duke of Suffolke perswades the people to Armes in vaine.

1554.

Countrey that no way favoured his proceedings, to oppose the Earle were desperate madnesse. Therefore distributing his money amongst them, faines a flight, adviseth his brothers and the rest to disperse themselves, and having thus freed himselfe from the danger of obsequious eyes, committed himselfe to the trust of one VNDERWOOD, whom hee had formerly made his Ranger at *Astley*. But benefits oblige not ignoble mindes, which either mercenary or timid, treacherously faile in their reposed trust. Such did this man prove, who having promised for a while to shelter his Lord, vntill hee should be thinke himselfe of some other expedient course, either out of feare or hope of reward, betrayed him to the Earle of *Huntingdon*, by whom guarded with three hundred Horse, hee was brought to *London*, and on the eleventh of *February* committed to the Tower.

In the meane time the Queene iealous of the *Londoners*, especially since *BRET'S* revolt, on the first of *February* attended by most of the Nobilitie, came to Guild hall, where the Commons of the City were assembled in their Liveries, to whom she spake after this manner:

*The Queens
oration to
the Londoners.*

Although Wee doubt not of your loyaltie, and so need not give an accompt of Our actions; yet having intelligence that many seduced by this Arch-traitours gay pretexts, do secretly favour his designes; Wee have, to give satisfaction to all, condescended to this dayes

1554.

dayes meeting with the Infant of Spaine is that forsooth, that must colour all his villanies. But his actions discover his deeper practices. For having now somewhat increased his numbers, his madnesse hath so transported him beyond the distaste of Our Match, that hee now resolves on the custodie of Our Person, and absolute power of removing, retaining, punishing of Our Counsaile whom hee list. In this great affaire of Our Marriage, Wee have done nothing but by the advise of Our Peeres. Wee have lived the greatest part of Our age, single. Neither do Wee now so long for a Husband, but that, if the Estates of Our Realme iudge it convenient, Wee will continue Our Virgin estate. For, that I should seeke to indanger England, and to confound all things by an vnfortunate Match, the love of Our native soile, the long knowledge of Our peaceable disposition, Our indevours for your good will perswade you to the contrarie. Persist therefore in your loyall resolutions, and assist vs in executing Our due revenge on these Monsters of men, who conspire to take away the Head which was ordained to guide them, and to suffer with them:

(Pp)

Nei-

1554.

Neither are Our demands other then We may in reason expect from you, who so maturely, so vnanimously admitted of Our Government, as deeming Us the vndoubted Successour to Our Royall Father and Brother.

Wyat comes
to London.

Having thus confirmed the mindes of the Citizens, hee armes five hundred men (the greater part strangers) to the choicest whereof he commits the defence of *London-bridge*, and disposes of the rest throughout the Citie. Two dayes after to *London* comes WYAT with an Army of three (or foure) thousand, full of hope, that having present admittance into the Citie, successe should crowne his actions, and that without either perill or paines. But things answered not his expectation. For comming to the Bridge, hee found it cut downe, the Gates shut and made good against him by armed troupes, who disdainfully bid the Traytour auant. Neverthelesse hee continued two dayes in *Southwerke*, hoping, that time and industry of secret practicers might worke some alteration.

But his hopes being here also frustrated, hee turnes his march for *Kingston*, there to gaine passage over the *Thames*. But the woodden Bridge there was also brokeu, and the opposite banke defended by two hundred men, whom the sight of two Peeces of Ordnance readie to be planted against them so terrified, that they left their station, and gave WYAT libertie to finde out meanes to waite his Army. Having surmounted this difficulty, he once more resolves for that Queene of Cities, and

1554.

and reposing all the successe of this adventure in celerity, without suffering his soldiers to repose themselves, makes with a round march for *London*, where he hoped to arrive before day, and to surprise the secure Queene. But God is the Protector of Princes, who more especially are his Images and Lieutenants; so that the practises of Rebels and Traitors against their lawfull Soveraignes seldome prove successefull. **W I A T** had (not improbably) beene master of his desires, had not God by an vnexpected accident retarded him, or rather so blinded him, that by vnnecessary delaies he overslipped his opportunity. He was now within six miles of *London*, when the carriages of one of his brasse pieces being broken, the piece became for the present unserviceable, because immovable. In remounting this piece some howers were lost, notwithstanding their persuasions who advised him not to neglect more reall advantages, as indeed he did: for by this meanes he came short of the time prefixed by those Citizens who were fautors of his cause. The consideration wherof made many despaire of successe and relinquish him, so that his army was quickly contracted to a smaller grosse. Among the rest Sir **G E O R G E H A R P E R** partaker of all **W I A T**'s stratagems, that he might wipe away the stains of Rebellion and his dissembled revolt by a loyall treachery, posted away to the Queene, and revealed the whole series of **W I A T**'s projects. The Queene amazed at the apprehension of this imminent danger, gives Commission to the Earle of *Pembroke* for the speedy raising of some Forces, and makes him Generall of the field. **W I A T** hearing that the Earle of *Pembroke* was in armes, betooke himselfe to a slower march, least he should be forced against these fresh souldiers to oppose his panting weary ones. So by noone he approached the suburbs, and planting his

1554.

ordnance vpon a hill beyond Saint *James*, left there the greatest part of his small Army to guard them. He himselfe with five Ensignes made toward *Ludgate*, and CVTBERT VAUGHAN with two other Ensignes toward *Westminster*, leaving S. *James* on the left hand: wherein I beleeve his chiefe end was, that by terrifying that part of the City, and consequently distracting the Queenes forces, WIAT might gaine passage with lesse difficulty. At *Charing-Crosse* Sir IOHN GAGE Lord Chamberlaine, with part of the Guard and some other souldiers made head against WIAT. But at length, either the Queene for feare of VAUGHAN so commanding, or not able to withstand the shocke, with more then an orderly march he made toward the Court, and filled it with terror and amazement. The Earle of *Pembroke* followed WIAT, still cutting him off behinde: by which kinde of fight WIAT, not turning head, lost many of his souldiers. The rest of the Rebels couragiously marching vp *Fleetstreet*, with ioyfull acclamations cried out, *Queene MARY, Queene MARY, God save Queene MARY, who hath granted vs our petitions, and pardon.* At length they came to *Ludgate* and desired entrance: But by their fained acclamations they gained nothing but reprochfull language. Whereupon they intend to returne the same way, but are circumvented by the Earle of *Pembrokes* Horse. Then CLARENTIEUX perswaded him to yeeld, and not beyond all his former madnesse, to surcharge himselfe with the bloud of so many valiant men. WIAT's souldiers seemed desperatly bent to make their way, but his courage was quailed. So he yeelded to Sir MAURICE BARKLEY, who mounting him behinde him, carried him presently to the Court. Their Captaine taken, the souldiers make no resistance; some few of them escape by flight,

Wiat is
taken.

flight, but the greater part fill the prisons of the City. These were the accidents of the sixt of February.

1554.

The Lady
Iane be-
headed.

Having thus suppress the Faction, the punishment of the Conspirators is next in execution. The first that was reflected on (as for whose sake this Rebellion had been set on foot) was Lady IANE; who having beene condemned on the thirteenth of November, had her execution hitherto deferred, not without hope of pardon. But to take away all farther cause of sedition, her death is now absolutely determined. Wherupon FECKNAM Deane of Pauls, afterward Abbot of Westminster, was sent vnto her to admonish her to prepare for death, and withall to persuaide her to entertaine the Romish Religion. This sad message so little moved her, that she professed her selfe bound in this to acknowledge Gods infinite goodnesse: as for discussing matters of controversie in Religion, her time was so short, that she could not dispence with the least losse of it: that little that was allotted her, she knew she might better spend in her devotions to Heaven. FECKNAM conceiving this answer to proceed from a desire of longer date of life, prevailes with the Queene for three daies more; and returning to Lady IANE, certifies her what hee had done; beseeching her to hearken vnto him, and to reforme her opinion in point of Religion. To whome she answered with a smiling countenance; *Alas Sir, it was not my desire that her Maiesty should be troubled with the report of my words: For thinke not that I am touched with any desire of prolonging my dayes: No, I am so far from it, that ever since your departure life hath afflicted me with its tediousnesse; and as for death, being wholly intent to the attaining of life eternall, I utterly despise it, and her Maiesties pleasure being such, I willingly*

1554.

undergo it. FECKNAM againe reiterated his persuasions, that she would imbrace the Religion of the Church of *Rome*: to whom her replies were such, that whosoever shall read the conference betweene them, (for it was after published) cannot without amasement wonder, how so tender an age, especially the Sex considered, should be capable of such constancy, learning, wisdom, wit. Her Husband Lord GUILFORD being first to suffer, desired leave to see her, converse with her, and take his last farewell: whereto shee would by no meanes consent, desiring him *to omit this foment of griefe, rather then comfort, in death; for they should shortly behold each other more really vnited in a better place and more happy estate.* Yet she vnappalled saw him conducted to *Tower-hill*, and with the same settled spirit beheld his headlesse trunk when it was returned to be interred in the Chappell of the Tower. The death of this innocent Lady, it was conceived, would not be without almost a generall distaste. But to decline it as much as might be, it was thought good that she should not be publicquely beheaded; wherefore there was a scaffold erected within the Tower, wheron about an houre or two after her husband, on the twelcfe of *February* shee submitted her necke to the axe. When she was conducted from the place of her imprisonment to the place of her suffering, the Lieutenant of the Tower desired her to vouchsafe him something or other which might serve as a monument to him, wherby to remember her; wherupon she demanded writing tables, and therein writ three short sentences in *Greeke, Latine*, (in which languages she was admirably skilled) and *English*, wherin she signified her innocence; and although she confessed she had committed

mitted an errour, which deserved death, yet ignorance might among men without preiudice to the Lawes sufficiently excuse it. At last saluting the people as she went, with a countenance settled and void of feare, and commending her selfe to their prayers, she came to the place of execution, leading F E C-
N A M by the hand, whome she kindly embraced, saying, *God I beseech him abundantly reward you for your kindenesse toward me, although I must needs say it was more vnrwelcome to me, then my instant death is terrible.* Then having to the Assembly in very modest language discoursed of her action, she said,

*I am condemned, not for having aspired to the Crowne, but because I refused it not being offered: and shall serve for a memorable example to posterity, that Innocence excuseth not great misdeeds, if they any way tend to the destruction of the Weale publique; for he hath abundantly plunged himselfe in ill, who-soever even perforce hath become the Instru-
ment of anothers ambition.*

Having spoken thus much, and implored God's mercy, by the helpe of her Gentlewoman she first disrobed her selfe of her gowne, then her attire, and vailing her eyes with her handkerchief, laied her head on the blocke, and exhorted the lingring Executioner to the performance of his office, which he at length did, his action drawing teares from the eyes of the spectators, yea even of those, who from the very beginning were affected to Queene M A-
R I E's Cause. This was the end of I A N E, a Lady renowned for the greatnesse of her birth, but
far

1554.

far more for her vertues and excellency of wit, who swayed by the ambition of her Father-in-law and imperious Mother, tooke on her that fatall title of a Queene; and being presently hurried from a Kingdome to a Scaffold, suffered for the faults of others, having overcome all the frownes of aduerse fortune by constancy and innocence.

Much more iust was that execution which within three dayes after insued. Twenty gibbets as well for terror of others as for present punishment, being erected in diuers parts of the City, on the fourteenth and fifteenth of *February* fifty of the *Kentish* Rebels were hanged on them. On the eighteenth of the same moneth, ALEXANDER BRET who drew those five hundred *Londoners* into a revolt from the Duke of *Norfolke*, was with a multitude of others (wherof many were of the Gentry) sent into *Kent*, there to vndergo exemplary punishment. On the twentieth of *February*, foure hundred of the same crew with halters about their neckes, were presented before the Queene, all humble suppliants on their knees, whome the Queene pardoned, and commanded their present liberty.

The Duke of
Suffolke be-
headed.

On the three and twentieth of *February*, HENRY GRAY Duke of *Suffolke* Father to Lady IANE, having beene condemned on the seventeenth of the same moneth, was publicly beheaded: a man whose facility to by-practises had occasioned all the troubles wherwith this Raigne had hitherto beene distracted; whose rash ingratitude (the Queene having once pardoned him beyond expectation) diverted the current of the Queenes clemency toward his Daughter, and brought him to a deserved end.

Wiat exe-
cuted.

The next turne was W I A T's, and that on the
eleventh

eleventh of *Aprill*. Who vpon a kinde of promise of pardon, if he would detect the rest of the Conspirators, suborned (as is conceived) by some malevolent persons, among the rest traduced yong COVRTNEY, as that having beene refused by Queene MARY, he aspired to marry the Lady ELIZABETH, to depose the Queene, and so to raigne as it were in the right of his wife. This accusation had procured their commitment, the Lady ELIZABETH's on the eighteenth of *March*, COVRTNEY's on the twelke of *February*. But WIAT finding himselfe deluded, and being toucht with the horridnes of so treacherous an accusation, going to the place of his execution, desired the favour of a few words with the Marquis of *Excester*, which was granted him. Of the Marquis he on his knees craved pardon for that irreparable iniury which he had done him, not out of malice, but desire of life. The Sherives of the City, with many others were then present, and after testified the certainty of this acknowledgement. But the Bishop of *Winchester* Lord Chancellor (who out of feare of change of Religion if Queene MARY dying, ELIZABETH should come to the Crowne, was content to lay hold on any occasion to cut her off) affirmed in the *Star-chamber*, and therto cited the testimony of the Lord *Chandois*, that WIAT a little before his death exhorted the Marquis to acknowledge his crime, and to submit himselfe to the Queenes mercy. But what apparance of truth can there be in this, it being certaine, that WIAT having ascended the fatall scaffold, seeing the instruments of death before his eyes, and having composed himselfe for another world, did with sincere protestations and religious asseverations acquit the Lady ELIZABETH and the Lord COVRTNEY from being any the least way conscious to his practises?

On

1554.
and Lord
Thomas
Grey.

A Disputa-
tion at Ox-
ford,

On the seven and twentieth of *Aprill*, Lord THOMAS GRAY was beheaded for having by persuasions as it were thrust on his irresolute brother the Duke of *Suffolke* to partake with WILKIN in his seditious attempts.

On the sixteenth of *May* the Lady ELIZABETH was removed from the Tower to *Woodstock*, and the Marquis of *Excester* to *Foderingay*, the place onely being altered, and nothing remitted of the strictnesse of their imprisonment.

About the same time that reverend CRANMER yet Archbishop of *Canterbury*, NICHOLAS RIDLEY lately deprived of the Bishopricke of *London*, and HUGH LATIMER who so long ago resigned his Bishopricke of *Worcester*, were removed from the Tower to *Windsore*, and thence to *Oxford*, there solemnly to dispute with the Divines of both Vniversities concerning the *Eucharist*. Their vsage was extreme almost beyond beleefe. Two dayes onely were allotted them for their preparation; and those two dayes were they in straight custody in severall either dungeons or places little differing, debarred both the conference of any but their Gaoler, and the vse of their owne papers and bookes. In the Schooles the behavior toward them was as barbarous as their vsage had beene tyrannicall: Shouts and outcries were the chiefeft Arguments, many opposing one, without order, without manners, without modesty. On the fcurteenth of *Aprill* from the Prison they were brought to *S. Maries*, and commanded to abjure; vpon their refusall, a day is prefixed for publique dispute: CRANMER's day was the sixteenth, RIDLEY's the seventeenth, LATIMER's the eighteenth of *Aprill*, each in their course to answer all Opponents; which each of them performed, & that so, that notwithstanding they were amased with rude cla-

1554.

clamours, and distracted with variety of Opponents, all vrging and craving answer at the same time, although they were scoffed at, reviled, and overborne with multitude, yet did they force their Aduersaries to admire them. CRANMER did learnedly, and according to the dignity wherein hee so many yeares flourished, gravely; RIDLEY acutely and readily: LATIMER with a pleasant tartnesse, and more solidly then could be expected of a man so neere the age of fourescore. The Disputation ended, they are againe on the twentieth of *Aprill* brought to S. *Maries*, and demanded whether they would persist in their opinions; vpon their reply, that they would, they were declared Heretiques, and condemned to the fire. Their constancy was the more manifested by their contempt of death. LATIMER was scarce capable of the joy he conceived, that God was pleased he should end his long life (whereto Nature would shortly set a period) with so happy a clause. As for their martyrdom, it falls in with the next yeare, and thither we remit it.

Cranmer,
Ridley, and
Latimer con-
demned.

Presently after those forepassed tumults, the Queene sends forth summons for a Parliament to begin the second of *Aprill*. In this Parliament shee proposeth two things, her Marriage and Subiection to *Rome* in matters Ecclesiasticall; this last she could not for a while obtaine, the other was assented vnto vpon conditions, That

PHILIP should not advance any to any publique Office or Dignity in England, but such as were Natives of England, and the Queenes Subiects: He should admit of a set number of English in his houshold, whome he should vse respectively, and not suffer them to

Additions to
the former
Nuptiall
Compacts.

1554.

be iniured by Forainers: He should not transport the Queene out of England but at her intreaty, nor any of the Issue begotten by her, who should have their education in the Realme, and should not be suffered but upon necessity or some good reasons, to go out of the Realme, nor then neither but with the consent of the English: The Queene deceasing without Children, PHILIP should not make any claime to the Kingdome, but should leave it freely to him, to whome of right it should belong: Hee should not change any thing in the Lawes either publique or private, the Immunities and Customes of the Realme, but should be bound to confirme and keepe them: He should not transport any Jewells, or any part of the Wardrobe, nor alienate any of the Revenues of the Crowne: He should preserve our Shipping, Ordnance, and Munition, and keepe the Castles, Forts, and Blocke-houses in good repaire, and well manned: Lastly, that this Match should not any way derogate from the League lately concluded betweene the Queene and the King of France, but that the Peace betweene the English and the French should remaine firme and inviolate: onely it should be lawfull for PHILIP out of other Kingdomes

domes and Dominions belonging to his Father the Emperour, to send aides vnto him either for propelling iniuries, or taking revenge for any already received.

1554.

All things being thus transacted, and no further impediment interposing betweene these Princes; PHILIP setting saile from the Groine on the sixteenth of Iuly, with a good Southerne gale within three dayes arrived at Southampton with a Fleet of one hundred and sixty saile, wherof twenty were English, and other twenty Flemings. Having rested himselfe there the space of three dayes attended by a great company of the English and Spanish Nobility, on the fower and twentieth of Iuly being a very wet day he came to the Queene at Winchester. The feast day of S. Iames (the tutelary Saint of Spaine) was destined for the Nuptialls, which were celebrated at Winchester with great pompe. There Don IVAN FIGVEROA for the Emperor resigned the Kingdomes of Naples & Sicily, and conferred all his right thereto on PHILIP: and the Heralds proclaimed their titles in Latine, French, and English. About the beginning of August these two Princes came to Basing, and thence to Windsor, where the King was installed Knight of the Garter. On the eleventh of August they came to London, where the Citizens received them with most magnificent solemnity.

Philip arriveth in England,

and is married to the Queene.

On the eleventh of November another Parliament began at Westminster: about the beginning wherof Cardinall POOLE (who by King HENRY had beene proclaimed enemy to the Estate, was created Cardinall by PAUL the Third, had himselfe beene Pope if he had but consented in

Cardinall Poole comes into Englad.

1554.

time, and in the opinion of many was thought a fit Husband for the Queene) arrived in *England*. Having beene put beside the Papacy by others default more then his owne, craving leave of the new Pope I V L I V S, he withdrew himself to a Monastery in the territory of *Verona* called *Maguzano*, the Religious whereof were *Benedictine* Monkes, of which Order hee himselfe while hee continued at *Rome* had beene Patron. Having decreed there to hide himselfe and spend the remainder of his dayes, the fame of King E D W A R D's death and Queene M A R Y's advancement to the Crowne, drew him againe out of the Cloister to *Rome*. He was not ignorant how M A R Y stood affected to the Sea of *Rome*, and therefore hoped (not without good cause) that I V L I V S, who much favoured him having by his delaies attained the Papacy, would send him into his Countrey with the honorable title and authority of a Legate. And now he fained to himselfe a double hope of a Kingdome, if not secular, at least Ecclesiasticall, by vertue of his authority Legatine and the dignity of Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Queene M A R Y had her education for some yeares vnder M A R G A R E T Countesse of *Salisbury* the Mother of P O O L E (who was then a childe) and that by Queene C A T H A R I N E S meanes, who intended (as it was thought) to marry her Daughter the Lady M A R Y to one of the Countesses Sonnes, thereby to strengthen her Daughters claime to the Crowne, if it should happen that H E N R Y should decease without other lawfull issue, the Countesse being Daughter to G E O R G E Duke of *Clarence*, who was brother to E D W A R D the Fourth. The Cardinall, whether for this or some other reasons, knowing himselfe to be in
deere

1554.

deere esteeme with the Queene, was confident if not of the Crowne by marriage, yet at least of all advantages of her favour. Neither was he therein deceived; for MARY having obtained the Crowne, earnestly sued vnto him to restore himselfe to his Countrey; and the Pope, not ignorant how much he would advantage the Apostolique Sea, at the Queenes request dispatched him with most ample authority. But the Emperour having a proiect on foot for his Sonne, was somewhat jealous of the Cardinall: and therefore began seriously to treat with Cardinall DANDINO the Popes Legat with him, for the conclusion of a Peace betweene him and the *French*, that so he might give a stop to POOLE, whose comming into *England*, the Emperours affaires being not yet settled, might peradventure make all fly asunder. DANDINO to gratify CHARLES, by FRANCISCO COMMENDONO sends Letters to POOLE, advising him not to set forth as yet, forasmuch as this Legacy vndertaken without the Emperours consent, was displeasing; and the *English* Nation for the most part, especially the *Londoners*, did so hate the name of the Pope of *Rome*, that his Legacy would be held in contempt among them: a Legate therefore was not to be employed vnto them, vntill persuasions had brought them to a better temper. POOLE having received these letters in his Cloister, thought it fitting to expect his Holinesse pleasure. The Pope not brooking the increase of the Emperours greatnes by the addition of such Estates, and fretting that DANDINO had presumed to stay the Cardinall, recalled DANDINO, and conferred on POOLE alone the Legacy both into *England* for the one affaire, and to the Emperour
and

1554.

and the *French* for the treaty of a Peace. He willingly vndertaking it, presently set forward from *Trent*, certifying the Emperour and the *French* of his large Commission. The Emperour perceiving that these devises would be no longer availcable, sent *Don I V A N de Mendoza* vnto him with letters, wherein he plainly discovered his feare, that the Cardinalls premature arrivall in *England* might prove an obstacle to his proceedings there, which were great and hopefull: wherfore it was his desire, that hee should either there attend his pleasure, or if hee would needs go further he might come to *Liege*, and there expect the event of his designs. The Cardinall vpon receipt of these letters returnes to *Dilling*, (not far from *Trent*) certifies his Holinesse of the whole carriage of the businesse, and sends expostulatory letters to the Emperour, shewing therein what an indignity it was to the Apostolique Sea, that his Holinesse Legat sent vpon a treaty of Peace, and to reduce a Kingdome to the obedience of the Church, should so disgracefully, with contempt to his Holinesse, and that by the Emperours command, be detained in the midst of *Germany* in the sight of the enemies of the Church. That great Divine *DOMINGO SOTO* Ordinary Preacher to the Emperour was then at *Dilling*. By him hee persuades the Emperour not to hinder this Legation, being it would so much hazard the estate of the Church, but especially of the Kingdome of *England*. At length with much ado, and that not vntill the Emperour had intelligence, that the Articles concerning his Sonnes marriage were agreed on, hee obtained leave to come to *Brussells*, but on this condition, that he should there reside vntill the Emperour were assured, that the marriage betweene

P H I L I P

1554.

PHILIP and MARY were solemnised. So to *Brussels* he came, where having saluted the Emperor, who received him very courteously, and that time might not passe vnprofitably, with him he begins to put in execution one part of his Legation, which was, to draw the Emperor and the King of *France* to some indifferent termes of peace. The Emperor professing, that he would not reiect peace vpon any reasonable conditions, the Cardinall goes into *France*, to treat with HENRY concerning the same thing: who made as faire shewes as did the Emperour; but their mindes exulcerated with inveterate hate, made all his paines fruitlesse. HENRY at his departure embracing him, signified the sorrow he had conceived, that he had not sooner occasion to be acquainted with his worth: for had he truly knowne him, his endeavours should have beene totally for his advancement to the Papacy.

A little after his returne to *Brussels*, came the Lords *Paget* and *Hastings* Embassadors to the Emperour from their Maiesties of *England*, who signified their joint longing to see the Cardinall, and therefore desired he might be forthwith dismissed, that by vertue of his authority he might rectify the Church of *England* wonderfully out of tune by reason of the Schisme wherwith it had beene afflicted. So in *September* hee had leave to go for *England*, but was by contrary windes detained at *Calais* vntill *November*, in which moneth he at length arrived at *Dover*. His entertainment was most honorable, the Kings and Nobles alike striving to manifest their joy. And because being in the yeare 1539. by Parliament declared Enemy to the Estate, and by the same Law condemned to dy; the Estates then assembled in Parliament repealed that Act, and restored him to his Bloud, the Kings themselves comming to the House extraordinarily

1554.

Cardinall
Pooles Ora-
tion to the
Parliament.

narily for the confirmation of the Act before his arrivall at London. A little after his comming, both Houses were sent for to the Court, where the Bishop of Winchester lord Chancellor having in the presence of the Kings and the assembly spoken something concerning the Cardinalls gratefull arrivall, the Cardinall himselte began a long oration in English, wherein Hee acknowledged how much he was bound to the Kings and the Estates of the Realme, by whose favor those Lawes for his exile and proscription were repealed, and he once more made a Native of the land: he was bound by the Lawes of gratitude to endeavour the requitall of this benefit, whereto an occasion happily offered it selfe: The late Schisme had separated them from the union of the Church, and made them exiles from heaven; By the authority conferred on him by the Pope Saint PETER'S Successor CHRIST'S Vicar, he would bring them backe into the Fold of the Church, the sole meanes of attaining their celestiall Heritage. Wherefore he exhorted them ingenuously to acknowledge the errors of these later yeares, and to detest them, with sincere alacrity of minde to accept of, and retaine this benefit, which God by his Vicar's Legate did proffer them. For now nothing else remained, but that hee being present with those Keyes which should open the gates of the Church, they should also abrogate those Lawes, which lately enacted to the prejudice of the Church, had rended them from the rest of it's Body.

Having spoken a great deale to this purpose, and ransacked Antiquity for examples of our fore-fathers devotion to the Sea of Rome; his grave delivery, excellent language, and methodicall contexture of his speech wrote so effectually in the mindes of those who were addicted to Popery, that they thought not themselves vntill this day capable of Salvation. But many of the lower House, who deemed it a rare felicity to have shaken off the yoke of Rome, eagerly with-

withstood the re-admittance of it. But by the endeavours of the King and Queene all things were at last composed to the Cardinalls liking. The authority which the *Popes* heretofore vsurped in this Realme is restored, the title of *Supreme Head of the Church* is abrogated, & a Petition drawne by the whole Court of Parliament, for the Absolution of the People and Clergy of *England* from Schisme and Heresy is by the Bishop of *Winchester* presented to the Legate, who (they all kneeling) by the authority committed vnto him absolved them. This being done, they went to the Chappell in Procession singing *Te Deum*, and the next Sunday the Bishop of *Winchester* in his Sermon at *Pauls-Crosse* made a large relation of what had passed.

These things being thus settled, the Queene intends an honorable Embassy to *Rome*, wherof she had at her first comming to the Crowne made promise. For having resolved to replant the Religion of *Rome*, she had privily written to POOLE, requiring his advice therein. The Pope was therefore pleased to send into *England* GIOVANNI FRANCISCO COMMENDONO his Chamberlaine (afterward Cardinall) for the more perfect notice of the estate of the Realme. To him the Queene after much privat conference did vnder her hand promise obedience to the Sea of *Rome*, desiring withall, that the Kingdome might be absolved from the Interdict; for the obtaining wherof she would by a solemne Embassy petition his Holinesse as soone as the Estate was settled. So now about the end of this yeare the Bishop of *Ely*, Sir ANTHONY BROWNE, and EDWARD CARNE Doctor of Law, are by the Kings sent to proffer their obedience to the Sea of *Rome*. But these costs and paines were fruitlesse. For before they came to *Rome* the Pope was dead. In the meane

1554.

*The Realme
freed from
Interdiction.*

1554.

see also p. 155
most likely
misreading

time the Queene considering all her actions hitherto to have passed with full applause, began to treat with the Nobility, to condescend, that if not the Royall, at least the matrimoniall Crowne of our Queenes might be imposed on PHILIP. But it being a matter without precedent, and that might perchance to an ambitious Prince give some colour for claime to the Kingdome, they proved averse, and shee content to surcease.

The next care was of restitution of Church lands. But HENRY had so divided them, and that among the Nobility, that nothing could be done therein. Only it was decreed, that the First-Fruits and Tenths granted to the King by the Clergy Anno 1534, should be remitted: which Decree vpon consideration of the Treasuries poverty, and of the many Pensions granted by HENRY to the eielected Religious Persons, was quickly revoked.

The Queene
thought to be
with childe.

About the same time an absurd (I might say ridiculous) accident happened, by the Queens owne credulity and the flattery of fawning Courtiers. By reason of a disease, which Physitians terme a Mole, her belly began to swell: and some other reasons giving her cause to coniecture that she was with childe, shee not entertaining the advice of any Physitians, but of Mid-wives and old women, beleaving what she desired should be, affirmed that she felt the stirring of the Embryo in her wombe. To those that are affected with this malady, that fleshy and informe substance which is termed Mola, doth seeme sometimes to move, but that slowly, and with the generall motion of the whole belly. By this and other symptoms Physitians would quickly have discovered her disease, which vnlesse very maturely prevented, is commonly incurable: so that in proceffe of time her Liver being over-cooled, she fell into a Dropsy, which as

FUCHSIVS

1554.

FVCHSIVS and other Physitians write, doth vsually happen. But these flattering hopes betraied her to the laughter of the world, and to her grave. For on the seven and twentieth of *November* the Lords of the Counsaile sent some Mandates to the Bishop of *London*, to disperse certaine formes of Praiers, wherein after thanks given to God for his Mercies to this Kingdome, by giving hopes of an Heire to the Crowne, and infusing life into the *Embryo*, they should pray for the preservation of the Queene and the Infant, and her happy delivery, and cause *Te Deum* to be sung every where. Then by Parliament many things were enacted concerning the education of the Babe; and much clutter was otherwise kept about preparatiours for the Childes swadling clouts, cradle, and other things requisite at the Delivery; vntill in *June* in the ensuing yeare it was manifested, that all was little better then a dreame.

This yeare were many Barons created. On the eleventh of *March*, WILLIAM HOWARD was created Lord *Howard of Effingham*, he was Father to CHARLES Lord Admirall and late Earle of *Notingham*: on the fift of *Aprill*, IOHN WILLIAMS Lord *Williams of Tame*: on the seventh of *Aprill*, EDWARD NORTH Baron of *Chartlege*: on the eighth of *Aprill*, IOHN BRUGES Lord *Chandois*: on the fourteenth of *May*, GERARD FITZ-GERARD (of whome before) Earle of *Kildare*: and on the second of *September*, ANTHONY BROWNE Viscount *Mountague*: And in *September* deceased THOMAS Duke of *Norfolke*.

Lords created.

Rr 2 Anno

1555.

Anno Dom. 1555. Reg. MARIE 2. & 3.
PHILIPPI 1. & 2.

ON the eighteenth of *January* the Lord Chancellor comming to the Tower with six other Lords of the Counsaile set many brave prisoners at liberty, viz. the Archbishop of *Yorke*, Sir JOHN ROGERS, Sir JAMES CROFT, Sir NICHOLAS THROCKMORTON, Sir NICHOLAS ARNOLD, Sir GEORGE HARPER, Sir WILLIAM SENTLOW, Sir GAWIN CAREW, Sir ANDREW DUDLEY the Duke of *Northumberland's* Brother, WILLIAM GIBS, CVTBERT VAUGHAN, HARINGTON, TREMAINE, and others. The Archbishop having married a Wife, was deprived, and NICHOLAS HEATH sometimes Bishop of *Worcester*, but deprived by King EDWARD, and (HOOPER being eielected and condemned to the fire) lately restored by Queene MARY, was substituted in his place. ROGERS and CROFT were afterward Privy Counsaillers to Queene ELIZABETH, vnder whome they many yeares flourished in great authority. THROCKMORTON (a subtle man) was thought to have beene the plotter of WIA T's Rebellion: his head was therefore especially aimed at. But being indicted, and ten whole howers spent in sifting him, he by such witty answers voided the accusation of his Adversary, that the Iurors found him *not guilty*; for which they were afterward soundly fined.

Lady Elizabeth and Marquis of Excester set at liberty.

About the beginning of *Aprill*, the Marquis of *Excester*, and a little after, the Lady ELIZABETH were set at liberty. Concerning Lady ELIZABETH, it was long consulted what course to take with her, wherein the resolutions of the Papists were bloudily bent to make her away when any colourable occasion

1555.

caſion ſhould preſent it ſelfe. The Biſhop of *Wincheſter* vpon any ſpeech concerning the puniſhment of Heretiques, is reported to have ſaid, *We ſtrip off the leaves, or lop off the branches; but vnles we ſtrike at the Root that hope of Heretiques,* (meaning Lady *ELIZABETH*) *we do nothing.* But after long ſearch into her actions, no ſufficient matter of accuſation being found, although there wanted not thoſe who ſought to perſuade the Queene, that her liberty would indanger the Queene; yet *PHILIP* aſpiring to the opinion of clemency, by his interceſſion toward the end of *Aprill* ſhe had her liberty, but ſo, that ſhe was bound to admit of into her Family Sir *THOMAS POPE* a Privy Counſailer, *GAGE*, and ſome others, who ſhould alwaies keepe watch over her actions.

This ſmall ſparkle of clemency was obſcured by a greater flame of cruelty, a multitude of godly men ſuffering this yeare for their conſcience only. On the fourth of *February*, *IOHN ROGERS* the Protomartyr of thoſe times was burned at *London*. He was *TINDALL*'s companion, after whoſe death fearing perſecution, hee would not returne into his Countrey, but went with his Wife to *Wirtemberg*, where having attained to the *Germane* Tongue, hee vndertooke the Cure of a certaine Church there, which he faithfu'ly diſcharged, vntill vnder King *EDWARD* he was recalled from exile, by *RIDLEY* Biſhop of *London* made a Prebend of *Pauls*, and Lecturer there. Queene *MARY* having attained the Crowne, the Papifts endeavored to affright him, and ſo to have once more forced him to a voluntary exile, commanding him not ſo much as to peepe into the ſtreets: and in this manner lived he a yeare, vntill at laſt refuſing to fly, he was imprifoned, and con-

*Iohn Rogers
burned.*

1555.

and Bishop
Hooper.

condemned to the fire; which cruell death (notwithstanding that he was to leave a wife and ten children) he did most constantly vndergo.

The like end on the ninth of *February* made I O H N H O O P E R Bishop first of *Glocester*, and then of *Worcester* too, holding both Seas in *Commendam*, who tooke much paines about B O N E R's deprivation, which thing now hastened him to a stake. For as soone as Queene M A R Y was inthroned, he was sent for to *London*, committed to the Tower, and condemned for an Heretique. H E N R Y reigning, he spent part of his life in *Germany*, where hee tooke to wife a *Burguignon*, and among other devout learned men, had intimate familiarity with H E N R Y B V L L I N G E R, by whome for his learning, godly and sweet conversation he was held in deere esteeme. After his condemnation hee was sent to *Glocester*, there to suffer, where hee was thought most to have sinned in sowing seeds of error: He himselfe not a little rejoicing that he should by the testimony of his bloud confirme that Doctrine before their eyes, into whose eares hee had so often inculcated it.

Bishop
Farrar.

The same course was taken with F E R R A R Bishop of *S. Davids*, who was brought downe frō *London* to his owne Dioces, there to be judged by the new Bishop M O R G A N, by whome he was condemned, and burned at *Carmarden* the third of *March*. He was a man rigid and of a rough behaviour, which procured him much trouble vnder King E D W A R D, and now I beleeve proved his bane. For having been by the Duke of *Somerset* advanced to that Dignity, after his death this good and learned man by his sower behavior drawing neere to arrogance (which with that Nation is a great indignity) raised against him-

1555.

himselfe many accusers, two whereof vnder Queene ELIZABETH became Bishops, who after the death of the Duke of *Somerset* easily prevailed with the adverse Faction for his imprisonment. Being found in prison when MARY came to the Crowne, and brought before the Bishop of *Winchester*, he might (I beleeve) by pleasing answers and a little yeelding to the season, have honestly escaped their bloudy hands, as did many others, who having not waded too far in Lady IANE's cause, nor otherwise given any grand affront to any of the Popish Prelates, by this meanes without impediment going into voluntary exile, or being taken, had their liberty easily procured at the intercession of Friends. But FERRAR according to his innate tartnesse, answering freely (I will not say waiwardly) to his interrogatories, did so inrage the Bishop of *Winchester*, that I do not much wonder at the hard proceedings against him.

Beside these, ROLAND TAILOR Doctor of Divinity suffered at *Hadley* the ninth of February, LAVRENCE SANDERS an excellent Preacher, on the eighth at *Coventrey*, IOHN CARDMAKER Chancellor of the Church of *Wells* on the last of May at *London*, where also on the first of *Iuly* that godly and learned man IOHN BRADFORD vnderwent the tortures of his martyrdome.

But not to go to a particular enumeration of all that suffered for their Faith, the number of them was almost incredible, the greater part whereof were executed out of BONER's butchery. But among others we cannot omit those Worthies RIDLEY and LATIMER, who having beene condemned the yeare before, were now on the sixteenth of *October* conducted to execution, and at *Oxford* in the aspect of the Academiques were in the Towne ditch neere *Balioll Colledge* tied to a stake and burned.

C R A N M E R

many others,

and Bishop
Ridley, and
Latimer.

1555.

*The death of
Pope Iulius
the Third.*

*Paul the
Fourth
succeedeth.
Gardiner su-
eth to be Car-
dinall.*

C R A N M E R is reported from the higher part of his prison to have beheld this dolefull spectacle, and with bended knees and elevated hands to have praied for their constancy of Hope and Faith, as also for himselfe who was shortly hee knew to tread their path. But his execution was for a time deferred by the Bishop of *Winchesters* meanes, and that not out of pittie, but ambition, and regard of his owne profit.

On the foure and twentieth of March died I V L I V S the Third, after whose death the Conclave elected M A R C E L L O C E R V I N O, a man of excellent learning, wisdom, and sanctity of life, and vnder whom there was great hope of the reformation of that Church: whose that memorable saying was, *That he did not see how it was possible for a Pope to be saved*; who having sate two and twenty dayes only, died, and left the Chaire to Cardinall C A R A F F A, of whose contention with P O O L E we have spoken already, who succeeded him by the name of P A V L the Fourth. G A R D I N E R being not ignorant of this contention, and the differences betweene them, deales vnderhand with this new *Pope* to honour him with a Cardinalls Hat, and to transfer on him the authority Legatine by I V L I V S conferred on P O O L E. The *Pope* in regard of his hatred to P O O L E, easily condescended thereto, determining also to cite him to *Rome*, there to force him to acquit himselfe of Heresy, and to suffer as did Cardinall M O R O N O P O O L E's great Friend, whome this *Pope* detained in prison as long as himselfe lived. Hereby G A R D I N E R well hoped to attaine to be Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the revenues of which Bishopricke P O O L E received as a Sequestratour, and would no otherwise as long as C R A N M E R lived. This was the reason that C R A N M E R's execution was

was deferred, to worke meanes that POOLE might not be invested in the Archbishopricke, which hee himselfe for the former reasons hoped to attaine. But while GARDINER was wholly intent to this proiect, death had a proiect on him, and cut him of by the extremity of a Dropsie, which swelling from his feet and legs vp to his belly dispatched him on the twelfth of November, who was with great solemnity interred in his Cathedrall at Winchester.

Gardiner
dieth.

The Emperour CHARLES the First having determined to resigne the Empire and his Kingdome, on the five and twentieth of October at Brussels, where all the Estates of his Realmes were assembled, transferred all his Kingdomes and Dominions on his Son PHILIP, whom he had formerly made King of Naples and Sicily, and betooke himselfe to the rest of a priuate life.

Charles the
Emperour
resignes his
Crownes.

Anno Dom. 1556. Reg. Mariæ 3. & 4.
Philippi 2. & 3.

TO begin the yeare with its first day, on the first of Ianuary, NICHOLAS HEATH Archbishop of Yorke was made Lord Chancellour.

1556.
The Arch-
bishop of
Yorke Lord
Chancellour.
A Comet.

In March, a Comet in the twentieth degree of Libra was seene from the first to the seventeenth of the same moneth.

On the thirteenth of March, a counterfeit EDWARD, whose true name was WILLIAM FETHERSTONE was executed for a Traitor: he being a Millers sonne, in stature and lineaments of bodie not much vnlike the deceased King EDWARD, and his age also agreeable, had bene the last yeare publicquely whipped through London, for affirming

A counter-
feit Edward.

SI

him

1556.

Archbishop
Cranmer
burned.

himselfe to be the King. But not sufficiently terrified by the smart of this punishment, hee againe betakes him to the same imposture, privately affirmes himselfe to be King EDWARD, and causes letters to be cast abroad, that King EDWARD was alive, for which he was at length deservedly hanged.

And now we are at length come to the narration of the memorable Martyrdome of the Archbishop CRANMER. STEPHEN GARDINER Bishop of Winchester being dead, Cardinall POOLE as yet the Pope's Legate appointed JAMES BROOKE Bishop of Gloucester for CRANMER'S triall, forasmuch as they iudged it vnlawfull to punish an Archbishop but by leave from his Holinesse. JOHN STORY, and THOMAS MARTIN Doctours of Law Commissioners for the Queene, accompanied the Bishop to Oxford, that the Authority Royall might countenance the Delegates proceeding. In Saint Maries Church, they had high seates purposely erected for them, BROOKE sitting vnder the place, where the consecrated Host did vsually hang in a Pixe, beside him sate MARTIN and STORY, but a little lower, and CRANMER habited like a Doctour of Divinite, not like a Bishop, was brought before them. Being told that there were those who represented not only her Maiesties person, but also of the most holy Father the Pope, hee with due reverence saluted STORY and MARTIN, but would not so much as vouchsafe to cast his eyes toward BROOKE, and that not (as he afterward confessed) ^{out} of contempt of the man, whom hee formerly loved, but that hee might not seeme to acknowledge the Popes authoritie, hee having by oath to King HENRY obliged himselfe to the contrary, especially in England, where hee could make no pretence of right. Then each of them exhorted him to change his opinion, and returne to the
vnity

vn^{on}ing of the Church: but hee not regarding their admonition, they cite him to appeare within fourescore dayes before his Holinesse, which with her Maiesties consent, he promised he would. But the Pope not expecting his comming, within twenty dayes after by letters to the King and Queene commanded him to be condemned, and committed to the Secular power. After the intercourse of a few dayes, new authoritie is by the Pope granted to BONER Bishop of London, and THIRLBY Bishop of Ely for CRANMERS degradation from Orders both Presbyteriall and Archiepiscopall and he then to be delivered over to the secular Magistrate to suffer for heresie, which was accordingly performed on the fourteenth of February. Those saintlike men, CRANMER, RIDLEY, and LATIMER, as long as they lived did by letters exhort each other to a generous constancie for the maintenance of the truth of the Christian faith. But the other two Champions having made their way to heaven, and left him alone not plied with such firme exhortations, out of desire of longer life his constancy began at length to be shaken, and that by the subtilty and daily perswasions of a Spanish Frier. So being seduced with hope of pardon, he retracts what ever he had before written in defence of his Religion, which retractation was after printed & published. But that little availed him. For whether that POOLE would not be longer excluded from the possession of the Archbishopricke, or that (which seemes more probable) the Queenes inveterate hate and desire of revenge for her Mothers Divorce, which could not be otherwise satiated then with the bloud of this grave man, were the cause: he being now confident of life is presently rapt to the place of execution, and there cruelly burned, where RIDLEY and LATIMER had five moneths before beene crowned with Mar-

1556.

tyrdome. On the day appointed for his execution, a Sermon by the appointment of the Cardinall was preached by Doctor COLLE. Thither was CRANMER brought, and placed conveniently neere the Pulpit, where COLLE exhorted him to a constancy in that faith, which hee was now content to acknowledge, and that even vnto death, which was now by the appointment of the Magistrate to be inflicted on him this very day. Gods wrath for the death of FISHER and MORE could not otherwise be appeased but by his bloud. But before his death, would he by a publique confession testifie his sincere conversion to the vni^{on} of the Church, hee should do an act most acceptable to God and men. If with this v unexpected newes CRANMER were amazed, I do not at all wonder. But he recollecting himselfe stood vp, and without any signe of feare, made a quicke Oration to the assembly, wherein having premised many things concerning morality and amendment of life, he repeates the principall points of his doctrine, briefly explaines his Faith, affirmeth, *that vnder the authoritie Papall the Kingdome of Antichrist was contained and established, and lastly demonstrates how much hee had offended God by the abnegation of the Truth: Hee professeth therefore, that he had resolved, that his right hand, wherewith he had so horribly sinned by subscribing to the doctrine proposed by the enemies of Truth, should first feelee the smart of punishment;* when hee would have proceeded to speake more, the multitude of Romanists whose expectation he had so finely deluded, with clamors and scofs interrupted him, & hurried him away presently to the place of execution. There was then to be scene a sad spectacle, and such as would, I will not say, have extorted pittie from his very enemies, but have expressed reares from a flint: the chiefe Prelate of the Realme lately flourishing by reason of his power and

1556.

and favour of Princes, a man of most holy conversation, for his age, aspect, feature, learning, gravitic and rare gifts of minde deservedly most Reverend, clad out of intent to expose him to mockery in an obsolete garment (for so had the Papists purposely arraied him) and bitterly taunted at to be dragged to death, and that death by the horrid tortures of fire. Being now fastned to the stake, as soone as ever the flame began to ascend, lifting vp his left hand to heaven, he thrust forth his right hand into the flame, and there with admirable constancie continued it vntill it were consumed, only once drawing it in, and with it stroaking his beard. At length the raging flame spreding it selfe, lifting vp his eyes toward heaven, hee cried out, *Lord receive my spirit*, and his bodie abiding as immovable as the stake whereto hee was fastened, hee patiently indured the fires violence, vntill hee at last expired. His bodie being consumed to ashes, his heart was found intire and vntouch't. Had any of the *Romanists* found the like in any one of their faction, it should have beene recorded for a miracle, and that miracle sufficed to have Sainted him. Give me leave, though it be contrary to the method of Historie, to insert a few verses written by RALPH SKINNER concerning this great mans Martyrdome:

*Succubuit sanctus Praesul CRANMERVS, iniqua
Pontificum rabie, fraude doloq; perit.
Quod Verbi in victo deiecerat Ense Papatum,
Quod docuit pura querere mente Deum;
Quodq; Antichristi subverterat impia regna,
Regna pijs Auglis heu tolerata diu;
Hinc pius & clemens crudeli addicitur igni,
Dantur & innocui membra cremanda viri.
Huc vbi iam ventum est, Dextram proiecit in ignem,
Proiectamq; tenens talia dicta dedit:*

Primum

1556.

*Primum peccasti, primum & sentire dolorem
 Debes, ab Christo dextra inimica meo.
 Immotamq; tenet dum deflagaverat omnis,
 In cineres totam dum cecidisse videt.
 Cetera cum pereant flammâ (mirabile dictu)
 Cor manet illæsum post ubi flamma perit.
 Ecce, invicta fides cor inviolabile servat,
 Nec medijs flammis corda perire sinit.*

Which Verses may thus be rendred in English:

Through Papists rage & fraud good CRANMER di'd,
 Because he put their doctrine to the Sword,
 The two-edg'd Sword of Scripture, and descri'd
 CHRIST'S Foe, instructing England with the Word:
 For this, meeke man, he had a Martyrs hire,
 His Soule was burnt with Zeale, his Corps with Fire.

But when he came vnto the stake, he thrust
 His right hand in the flames: Thou first (he said)
 Because thou first didst sinne, here suffer must,
 Thou first thy Lord and Master hast betraid:
 There held he it; his eyes did see it fall,
 Soone afterward he sent those eyes withall.

But lo, a wonder! Heav'ns sacred Oracle
 Had sure decreed, that so admir'd a creature
 Should not be put to death Sans Miracle:
 His Bodie burnt, his Heart in perfect feature
 Was found vnsing'd: See, See, the Faith he cherisht,
 Once in that Heart, preserv'd it still vnperisht.

*This yeare
 eighty foure
 burned.*

Beside CRANMER, the crueltie of those times did
 the same yeare devoure many professors of the same
 Religion. Of both sexes no fewer then eighty foure
 were this yeare martyred by fire. Neither did their
 crueltie

crueltie exercise it selfe on the living only: the bones of MARTYN BUCER and PAUL PHAGIVS long since dead, were digged vp, formally accused of heresie, and no man yndertaking their cause (as who durst?) condemned, and publicly burned in the market place at *Cambridge*. And PETER MARTYR'S wife, who died at *Oxford*, was disinterred, and with barbarous and inhumane cruelty buried in a dunghill. To BUCER and PHAGIVS Queene ELIZABETH did afterward with great solemnitie restore their memorie and honour: And as for PETER MARTYR'S wife, shee caused her bones to be translated from that vncleane place, to be reinterred in the Church, and commixed with the reliques of FRIDESWID (by Papists reputed a Saint) that the like occasion of mockage might not againe be offered.

On the same day, wher-on CRANMER thus ended his life, Cardinall POOLE was ordered Priest at *Greenwich*, and the next day, NABOTH being dead, tooke possession of his Vineyard, being consecrated Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Three dayes after, being the Feast of the Annunciation, accompanied by many Nobles, POOLE with great solemnitie received the Pall at *Bow-Church*.

About the same time a notable conspiracie was detected, some having projected to rob the Exchequer, at that time full of *Spanish* coine to the value of fiftie thousand pounds. The names of the conspirators were VDALL, THROCKMORTON, PECHAM, DANIEL, STANTON, and (besides others that fled for it) WHITE, who discovered his fellowes. The rest were all taken and suffred as Traitors. Sir ANTHONY KINGSTON as partaker in their intentions was also apprehended, but died before he could reach *London*.

In

1556.

*The exhumation of
Bucer and
Phagius.*

*Cardinall
Poole conse-
crated Arch-
bishop of
Canterbury.*

1557.

In *July*, new tumults begunne to be set on foot in *Norfolk* were maturely suppressed, *CLEBER* and three brothers called *LINCOLNE* the authours of it suffering for their seditious attempt.

On the one and twentieth of *November*, *JOHN FECKNAM* Deane of *Pauls* was installed Abbot at *Westminster*, which *HENRY* the Eighth had erected to an Archiepiscopall See. There being at that time no Monkes in *England*, fourteene were found who were content with *FECKNAM* to take the Religious habit of *Benedictines*.

Anno Dom. 1557. Reg. Mariæ 4. & 5.
Philipi 3. & 4.

1557.

An Embas-
sage to Mus-
covia.

NOW after foure or five yeares we found the effect of our Northerne Navigation set on foot by *CABOTA*. About the beginning of this yeare, arrived in *England* *OSEP NARBA* Embassadour from *BASILWITZ* Emperour of *Russia*, for the Treatie of a perpetuall League betweene our Kings and his Prince. On the *Scottish* coast hee had suffered wracke, and beside merchandize of infinite value, hee lost those Presents, which were from the Emperour destinated to their Maiesties. But the losse of *RICHARD CHANCELLER* was beyond all these inestimable, who being a most expert Pilot, first discovered the passage into those Northerne Regions, and now more sollicitous of the Embassadours safeguard then of his owne, this man most worthy of immortall memory was swallowed vp in the Seas insatiate gulfe. I thinke the intertainment of any Embassadour with vs was never more royall. On the five and twentieth of *May*, *PHILIP* having about seven dayes before returned out of *Flanders*, he was admitted

1557.

ted into the presence of the Kings, declared the purport of his Embassie, and continued in *London*, vntill the third of *May*: and having then got a convenient season, laden with gifts he set saile for his Countrey.

On the sixt of *March*, CHARLES Lord STOURTON for having in his house cruelly murdered one HARGILL and his sonne, with whom he had long beene at variance, was by a wholesome example to posterity hanged at *Sarisbury* with foure other of his servants, who were not only conscious, but actors in the cruelty. After hee had beaten them downe with clubs, and cut their throats, hee buried their carcases fiftene foot deep in the ground, hoping by such sure worke to stop the voice of bloud crying for revenge; or if peradventure it were discovered, the regard of his zealous persistance in the Religion of *Rome* would (he hoped) procure the Queenes pardon. But murder is a sinne that God hath by many memorable examples manifested, that it shal not remaine vndetected: and the Queene although blindly misled in matter of Religion, was so exact a faultrix of iustice, that she was vtterly averse from all mention of pardon. So this Nobleman had the punishment due to his offence, only in this preferred before other murderers and parricides, that he was not strangled with an halter of hempe, but of filke.

*The Lord
Stourton
hanged.*

The seven and twentieth of *April*, THOMAS STAFFORD landing in the Northerne parts of the Realme, having raked together a small company of exiles and some forainers, surprised *Scarborough* castle then, as in time of peace, vtterly destitute of provision for resistance: having thus seized on a place of defence, he makes Proclamation, that Queene MARY having her selfe no right to the Crowne had betraied it to the *Spaniard*, exhorting the people with him to take armes for the recovery of their lost liberty. But by the dili-

*Thomas
Stafford in-
devouring
an insurre-
ction is ta-
ken and be-
headed.*

Tt

gence

1557.

gence of NICHOLAS WOTTON Deane of Canterbury then Embassadour for their Maiesties with the French, all his designes were revealed to the Counsaile before his arrivall in England. So by the industry of the Earle of Westmerland hee was within six dayes taken, brought to London, and on the eight and twentieth of May beheaded, STRECHLEY, PROCTOR, and BRADFORD the next day following him but in a more due punishment (being drawne, hanged and quartered) whom they had followed in their treacherous attempts.

War against
France pro-
claimed.

The Emperour CHARLES having bequeathed the inheritance of his hate to France with his Crowne, MARY could not long distinguish her cause from her Husband's. Wherefore on the seventh of Iune, the Queene set forth a Proclamation to this effect, that

Whereas the King of France had many wayes iniured her by supporting the Duke of Northumberland and Wyatt in their Rebellions against her; and that his Realme had beene a receptacle for Dudley and Ashton, who with the privity of his Embassadour had in his house contrived their treacherous designes, and after their escape into France had beene relieved by Pensions from the King; as also for having lately aided Stafford with shipping, men, money, and munition, thereby if it were possible to dispossesse her of the Crowne: She gave her subjects to vnderstand, that they should not entertaine traffique with that Nation, whose Prince she accompted her Enemy, and against whom

upon

upon farther grievances shee determined to denounce war.

1557.

Although these things were true, yet had shee abstained from denunciation of warre, had not the five yeares Truce betweene PHILIP & HENRY by the Popes instigation beene lately broken by the French, and so warre arising betweene them, shee would not make her selfe & her Husband two. For the Pope having long since maligned the Emperour (knowing that he after the resignation of his Estates to his Son PHILIP had withdrawne himselfe into Spaine) by the Cardinall of *Lorraine* still sollicitated the French King to armes against the Spaniard, promising to invest him in the Kingdome of Naples. HENRY vpon these faire hopes vndertakes it, and MARY resolves to assist her Husband.

That MARY tooke armes in the behalfe of her Husband, Pope PAUL was much displeased. And being hee could not be revenged on her (who indeed was the sole cause of our breach with France) he determined to powre out his wra h on POOLE, whom he ever hated; but now he thought he had more cause to manifest it, because POOLE knowing that this war was set on foot by the Pope, had by letters and Embassadours sought to appease him, and that (though with most humble reverence) yet roundly and according to his conscience. Having abrogated POOLE'S Legation, he repeales him to Rome; and for supply of his place hee creates one FRANCIS PETOW (a Franciscan Frier) Cardinall and Legate, and a little after designed him Bishop of *Sarisbury*. The Queene having intelligence of these proceedings, tooke especiall care, that POOLE might have no notice of them, prohibiting not only this new Cardinall to enter the Realme, but all others whom shee suspected to bring

Poole's authority Legantine abrogated,

1557.

and restored.

The French
overthrowne
at S. Quintin.

any Mandates to that purpose, & with exact diligence causing his letters to be intercepted, by her Orators at Rome certified his Holinesse what a hazard the Catholique Religion not yet fully established would incur, if he should indeavour the disgrace of so great a man, whose authority had beene much available for the conversion of the Nation. But while there is this intercourse betweene the Pope and the Queene concerning this matter, POOLE having some way or other had an inkling of it, abstained from having the silv^r Cross the Ensigne of his Legation borne before him, neither would he afterward exercise his authoritie Legantine, vntill by the intercession of ORMANETO the Popes Datary in England, hee was restored to his dignitie.

By this time the warre was very hot on both sides, PHILIP besieging Saint Quint in in Picardie with thirtie five thousand Foot, and twelve thousand Horse, which number was after increased by a thousand Horse, foure thousand Foot, and two thousand Pioners out of England; vnder the Command of the Earle of Pembroke. For the managing of this war PHILIP set saile out of England on the seventh of Iuly. On the tenth of August, the French indeavouring to put succors into the Towne are overthrowne. The Spaniard chargeth the Constable MONTMORENCY in his retreat, routs the French, & kills two thousand five hundred: a victory not so great in the execution, as in the death and captivity of many brave men. The Constable was wounded & taken prisoner with his son, as also the Dukes of Montpensier & Longueville, LVDOVICO GONZAGA brother to the Duke of Mantua, the Marshal of Saint Andrew, the Ringraue, ROCHE-DV-MAINE, the Count Rochfoucault, the Baron of Curton, with many other men of marke. The chiefe of them that were slaine were JOHN of Bourbon Duke of Anguien, the Viscount of Turen, N.

TIERCELLIN son to ROCHE-DV-MAINE, the Lords of *Chandenier*, *Pontdormy* and many others, and in a manner all the foot Captaines. PHILIP lost only fifty men.

The eight day after this victorie an assault is given, and the Towne carried by force, wherein were taken the Admirall COLIGNY with his brother D'ANDELOT who (shortly after made an escape) IARNAC, S. REMY, HVMES, and many other persons of quality: the son of the Lord of *Fayette*, SALEVERT, OGIER, VICQYES, LABARRE, ESTANG and GOVRDES were slaine. Of the *English* in this assault few of note were lost, beside Lord HENRY DUDLEY yongest son to the Duke of *Northumberland*, and Sir EDWARD WINDSORE, who were the first that advanced Ensigne on the walls.

This yeare is alike memorable for the extreme dearth and contemptible cheapnesse of corne. A little before harvest wheat was sold at foure markes the quarter: within the current of a moneth it fell to the low rate of five shillings. Wherin I rather admire the insuing cheapnesse, then the dearth, having my selfe in the yeare 1597. paid double the former deare price.

But that which I shall now relate, I should deeme far more memorable, had I not in later times my selfe seene the like. On the night which insued the seventh day of *September*, almost two houres after Sun-set, the Moone having risen an houre before, a Rainbow was seene in the West. That I may relate the like accident though of differing time, the like apparition was seene by me on the foure and twentieth of *November* 1600. when (the Sun having two houres before declined to its lowest) travailing towards *Colebrooke*, the forme of a white cloud shaped into a fragment of a Circle, and iust opposite to the Moone then newly risen appeared, which did every way resemble a true Rainbow, but that it was not diversified with colors, and in steed of the Sunne had the Moone its opposite.

1557.

S. Quintin
taken.

A nocturnal
Rain-
bow.

1558.

Calais besieged by the French.

Anno Dom. 1558. Reg. ultimo.

HENRY some way to repaire his losses at Saint Quintin, resolves an enterprise vpon Calais, which SENARPONT Governour of Bouloigne perswaded him was not so fortified according to report, but that it might easily be taken. The Marshall STROSSY having vnder the favour of a disguise viewed the place, confirmed SENARPONT'S assurance of taking it. PHILIP whether having intelligence of HENRY'S designs, or else presaging so much, had often admonished the Queene to have an especiall regard to that Towne, voluntarie offering his assistance for the securitie of it. But wee overwisely ielous, least PHILIP had a practice on it, it lying commodiously for his adioyning Netherlands, neglected both his advice and proffer. But the reality of his advice was manifested by the event. The Duke of Guise having by the King beene declared Lieutenant Generall in all his Dominions, leuying a great Armie flies sudainly to the siege of Calais, before which he sate downe on Newyeares day, and intrenched at Sandgate. Then dividing his Army into two parts he at the same time assaults Newnambridge and the Risbanke, two Forts wherein the chiefe strength of that Towne consisted, the taking whereof would have cut of all possibilitie of relieving the besieged either by land or sea. The garrisons of each place terrified with so vnexpected a danger, hee at his first arrivall gaines Newnambridge, and the next day the Risbanke. The French then batter the wall betweene the watergate and the prison, not so much out of hope to gaine entrance that way, as to divert vs from garding that part of the Towne, where they really intended to give an assault. Having for a while battered that part, and

1558.

and we little suspecting an enterprise vpon the Castle, they sudainly with fifteene peeces make a battery vpon the Castle, and continue it with such fury, that the thunder of the Canon was all that day heard at *Antwerp*, which is distant from thence more then one hundred *English* miles. Having by that time night drew on made a sufficient breach, and yet in regard of the deepe dikes filled with water (wherin consisted the maine hopes of the defendants) not able to come to an assault, the Enemy with great toile and labour by a cut from thence to the sea draw the dikes so low, that by that time the tide was gone out, they march not above navell high through the dikes to the wall (which wee little feared could be done) without resistance: finding the place void of defendants they easily make themselves masters of the Castle, and had as easily taken the Towne, if Sir ANTHONY AGER Marshall of the Towne had not with some few others made head against them, and forced them to retreat to the Castle, in which conflict that valiant Knight was slaine. The Lord WENTWORTH Governour of the Towne seeing little hopes of keeping the Towne, craved parley, which was granted; and at length yeilded the Towne vpon these Conditions: *That the common souldiers and inhabitants should depart without transporting or carrying away any thing with them, and that the Lord WENTWORTH with fifty others such as the Duke of Guise should appoint, should remaine captives to be put to ransom.* So was *Calais* lost, which had continued *English* above two hundred yeares: neither was the siege long, the Enemy sitting downe before it on Newyeares day, and having it yeilded vp on Twelke day.

Calais yeilded.

Seven dayes after, the Duke marcheth toward *Guisnes*, which Towne he tooke without any difficultie, but the Castle, which the Lord GRAY commanded

1558.

ded, not so easily. But that and *Hames* Castle were at length taken also and dismantled; so that of all the Kingdome of *France*, the greatest part whereof was for a long time held by our Kings, and whereof *HENRY* the Sixt had beene crowned King at *Paris*, Anno 1431. nor in the Duchies of *Normandie* and *Aquitaine*, the ancient inheritance of the Kings of *England*, our Kings possesse nothing, but the Isles of *Iersey* and *Guernesey*, which have proved loyall to vs ever since the Conquest. While the *French* proceeded thus in *Picardie*, the Queene certified thereof with great diligence prepares her Fleet to transport succours for *Calais*: but contrary windes kept them backe so long, vntill *Calais* was irrecoverably lost.

You shall not easily read of any action, wherein God hath by more manifest signes declared, how displeasing those wars are to him, which vndertaken for ambition or profit do dissolve the publique peace: *PHILIP* (to begin with him) against whom *HENRY* and the Pope did most vniustly conspire, enlarged himselfe with a double victorie, each whereof were great and memorable. The Cardinall *CARAFFA* and the Duke of *Paliane*, who for their owne ends had perswaded the doting Pope to throw the ball of discord betweene these Princes, were after for this very thing beheaded by *PIVS* the Fourth, who immediately succeeded *PAVL*. *PAVL* himselfe in the meane time, the *French* being overthrowne at *Saint Quintin* was exposed to the mercy of the *Spaniard*, whom he had irritated, the *French* being forced to withdraw his Army out of *Italy*. The rash violation of the League by *MARY*, was punished with the losse of *Calais*, and through griefe thereof (according to common belief) of life also. What happened to the *French*, who by the Pope's instigation first brake the five yeares Truce, wee have already declared. And
least

1558.

least it might be conceived, that his losses at and of Saint QVINTIN were repaired by the taking of *Calais*, another overthrow given him within few moneths after, will take away much from the content of that victory.

In June the Marshall *De Termes* (who succeeded *STROSSY* lately slaine) Governour of *Calais*, breaketh into *Arthois* and *Flanders*, with an Army consisting of neere about eleven thousand men, leaving *Graveling* and *Burburg* at his backe, attempts *Berghes*, takes it, sackes it, and so opens a way to *Dunkirk*, which hee also takes and spoiles; and the Countrey all about (for they feared not the *French* there, and the Townes which the Spaniard held thoroughout that Tract, were ill furnished) lying open to their mercy, they ransacke it most miserably, and march as far as *Newport*.

The battaile
of Graueling.

PHILIP was affrighted with this Tempest, fearing especially, least the Duke of *Guise* then in Armes, should joine with *TERMES*: but having intelligence that the Duke spent his time about *Arlon* and *Vireton*, hee resolves to intercept the *French* in their returne. In this enterprise hee employes Count *EGMOND*, (his Lieutenent generall in the *Netherlands*) who having speedily out of the neighbour Garrisons of *Betune*, *Saint Omer*, *Aires*, *Burburg*, and others, assembled an Army of fifteene thousand, puts himselfe betweene *Dunkirk* and *Calais*. *TERMES* had hitherto expected the Duke of *Guise*, but vpon notice that the Countrey was vp in Armes, he somewhat too late bethought himselfe of a retreat.

ed

Vu

He

1558.

ded, not so easily. But that and *Hames* Castle were at length taken also and dismantled; so that of all the Kingdome of *France*, the greatest part whereof was for a long time held by our Kings, and whereof *HENRY* the Sixt had beene crowned King at *Paris*, Anno 1431. nor in the Duchies of *Normandie* and *Aquitaine*, the ancient inheritance of the Kings of *England*, our Kings possesse nothing, but the Isles of *Iersey* and *Guernesey*, which have proved loyall to vs ever since the Conquest. While the *French* proceeded thus in *Picardie*, the Queene certified thereof with great diligence prepares her Fleet to transport succours for *Calais*: but contrary windes kept them backe so long, vntill *Calais* was irrecoverably lost.

You shall not easily read of any action, wherein God hath by more manifest signes declared, how displeasing those wars are to him, which vndertaken for ambition or profit do dissolve the publique peace: *PHILIP* (to begin with him) against whom *HENRY* and the Pope did most vniustly conspire, enlarged himselfe with a double victorie, each whereof were great and memorable. The Cardinall *CARAFFA* and the Duke of *Paliane*, who for their owne ends had perswaded the doting Pope to throw the ball of discord betweene these Princes, were after for this very thing beheaded by *PIVS* the Fourth, who immediately succeeded *PAVL*. *PAVL* himselfe in the meane time, the *French* being overthrowne at *Saint Quintin* was exposed to the mercy of the *Spaniard*, whom he had irritated, the *French* being forced to withdraw his Army out of *Italy*. The rash violation of the League by *MARY*, was punished with the losse of *Calais*, and through griefe thereof (according to common beliefe) of life also. What happened to the *French*, who by the Pope's instigation first brake the five yeares Truce, wee have already declared. And
least

1558.

least it might be conceived, that his losses at and of Saint QVINTIN were repaired by the taking of *Calais*, another overthrow given him within few moneths after, will take away much from the content of that victory.

In June the Marshall *De Termes* (who succeeded *STROSSY* lately slaine) Governour of *Calais*, breaketh into *Arthois* and *Flanders*, with an Army consisting of neere about eleven thousand men, leaving *Graveling* and *Burburg* at his backe, attempts *Berghes*, takes it, sackes it, and so opens a way to *Dunkirk*, which hee also takes and spoiles; and the Countrey all about (for they feared not the *French* there, and the Townes which the Spaniard held thoroughout that Tract, were ill furnished) lying open to their mercy, they ransacke it most miserably, and march as far as *Newport*.

The battaile
of Graveling.

PHILIP was affrighted with this Tempest, fearing especially, least the Duke of *Guise* then in Armes, should joine with *TERMES*: but having intelligence that the Duke spent his time about *Arlon* and *Vireton*, hee resolves to intercept the *French* in their returne. In this enterprise hee employes Count *EGMOND*, (his Lieutenent generall in the *Netherlands*) who having speedily out of the neighbour Garrisons of *Betune*, *Saint Omer*, *Aires*, *Burburg*, and others, assembled an Army of fifteene thousand, puts himselfe betweene *Dunkirk* and *Calais*. *TERMES* had hitherto expected the Duke of *Guise*, but vpon notice that the Countrey was vp in Armes, he somewhat too late bethought himselfe of a retreat.

ed

Vu

He

1558.

The French
overthrowne.

Hee was now every way inclosed, and passage not to be gained but by dint of sword. The *French* therefore valiantly charge their Enemies, and overthrow some Squadrons of Horse; indeed dispaire animated them to do wonders, and the *Flemings* were set on fire by the desire of revenging late injuries. The *Spanish* Troupes renew the fight, which was with equall order long maintained on both sides: in the heate whereof ten *English* Men of War fortunately failing by (for *De TERME*s had for his security betaken him to the shore, hoping that way with much lesse hazard to have gained passage) vpon discovery of the *French* Colours, let fly their Ordnance furiously among the *French*, making such a slaughter, that they began to give ground, were at last routed and overthrowne.

The *French* in this battaile lost five thousand. Their chiefe Commanders were almost all taken: the Marshall himselfe was hurt and taken, with *D'AINNEBALT* the Son of *CLAVD* the late Admirall, the Earle of *Chaune*, *SENNARPOINT*, *VILLEBON* Governour of *Picardy*, *MORVILLIERS*, and many others. Two hundred escaped to our Ships, whome they might have drowned, but giving them Quarter, they were brought (Captives into *England*). This battaile was fought on the thirteenth of *July*.

The *Queene* desirous by some action or other to wipe out the staine of the ignominious losse of *Calais*, about the same time set forth a fleet of one hundred and forty Saile (whereof thirty were *Flemings*) the

the maine of the expedition being from *Brest* in *Bre-taigne*. But the Lord *Clinton* Lord high Admirall of *England* finding no good to be done there, set faile for *Conquet*, where he landed, tooke the Towne, sacked it and set it on fire, together with the Abbey and the adiacent villages, and returned to his ships. But the *Flemings* somewhat more greedy after prey, disorderly piercing farther into the Countrey, and regardlesse of martiall discipline, which commands obedience to their Generall, being incoun-tered by the Lord of *Kersimon*, came fewer home by five hundred.

PHILIP about the same time lodging neere *Amiens* with a great Army, HENRY with a far greater attended each motion of his. They incampe at last, HENRY on the North of the river *Somme*, PHILIP on the South of the river *Anthy*, so neere to one another, that it might be thought impossible for two such spirited Princes commanding so great Armies, to depart without a battell. But divers considerations had tempered their heat. PHILIP being the weaker of the two, saw no reason why to ingage himselfe. HENRY had an Army which had twice felt the other victorious, and was therefore loath on them to adventure his already shaken estate. Wherefore they so intrenched themselves, and fortified their Campes with Artillery, as if they expected a siege from each other. Some moneths thus passed without any other exploits then in-rides and light skirmishes. At length they mutual-ly entertaine a motion of peace, both of them con- sidering, that their Armies consisting of strangers, the fruits of the victory would be to the Aliens on- ly, but the calamity and burthen of the defeat would light on the shoulders of the vanquished, or

1558.

Conquet ta-
ken and bur-
ned by the
English.

The Death
of King
Henry
the
second
of
France

1558.

(which comes all to one passe) of the subiects. These motives drew together for a treaty on HENRY'S side, the Constable, the Marshall of *S. Andrew*, the Cardinall of *Lorraine*, MORVILLIERS Bishop of *Orleans*, and AVBESPINE Secretary of Estate: for PHILIP the Duke of *Alva*, the Prince of *Orange*, RYZZ GOMES *de Silva*, GRANVELL Bishop of *Arras* and others. Much altercation was had about the restoring of *Calais*, which the *French* were resolved to hold, and PHILIP would have no peace vnlesse it were restored to MARY, whom in point of honour he could not so forsake. But this difference was ended by the death of MARY, a little before whome on the one and twentieth of *September* died also the Emperour CHARLES the Fift, which occasioned both the change of place and time for another Treaty.

The Daul-
phin married to the
Queene of
Scots.

And if the continuall connexion of other memorable affaires had not transported me, I should ere this have mentioned the marriage celebrated at *Paris* with great pompe on the eight and twentieth of *Aprill*, betweene the Daulphin FRANCIS and MARY Queene of *Scots*. But the fruits thereof were not lasting: For two yeares after died FRANCIS (the Crowne by the death of his Father HENRY having beene first devolved to him) and left his bed to a more auspicious husband HENRY the eldest Sonne to the Earle of *Lenox*. Of these Parents was borne our late Soveraigne of ever sacred memory, who was Nephew by his Mother to JAMES the Fift, by MARGARET the eldest Daughter Nephew to that wise King HENRY the Seventh, who, the Issue of HENRY the Eight being extinct, as the next vndoubted Heire, most happily vnited

vnited the Crownes of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ir-*
land.

1558.

But now at length to draw neerer home, this Au-
tumne was very full of diseases, Fevers (especially
quartane) raigning extraordinarily in *England*, wher-
by many, chiefly aged persons, and among them a
great number of the Clergy perished. Of the sole E-
piscopall ranke thirteene died either a little before
the Queene, or some few moneths after her. Among
the rest Cardinall P O O L E scarce survived her a day,
who having beene for some weekes afflicted by this
kinde of disease, and brought to extreme weakenesse
of body, as if he had at the newes of the Queenes
death received his deaths wound, expired at three
a clocke the next morning. His corps inclosed in
lead, was buried in his Cathedrall at *Canterbury*, with
this brieft Elogy on his Tombe, in steed of an Epi-
taph:

*The death of
Cardinall
Poole.*

Depositum Cardinalis P O L I.

He was a man admirably learned, modest, milde, of a
most sweet disposition, wise, and of excellent dexte-
rity in the managing of any affaires, so that hee had
beene incomparable, if corrupted with the Religion
of the Church of *Rome* he had not forced his nature
to admit of those cruelties exercised vpon the Prote-
stants.

The Queene died at *S. Iames* on the seventeenth
of *November* some few houres before day. She was a
Lady very godly, mercifull, chaste, and every way
praise-worthy, if you regard not the errors of her
Religion. But her Religion being the cause of the ef-

*The Queene
dieth.*

1558.

fusion of so much innocent blood, that of the Prophet was necessarily to be fulfilled in her, *Bloud-thirsty men &c. shall not finish halfe their dayes.* For she was cut off in the two and fortieth yeare of her age, having raigned onely five yeares foure moneths and eleuen dayes; whereas her Sister, who succeeded her, most happily in a more milde gouvernement ruled nine times as long, and almost doubled her age. Concerning the cause of Queen MARIE's death there are divers conjectures. To relate what I finde in approved Authors, it is reported, that in the beginning of her sicknesse her friends supposing that she grieved at the absence of her husband, whome she saw so engaged in wars abroad, that she could not hope for his speedy returne, vsed consolatory meanes, and endeavored to remove from her that fixed sadnesse wherewith she seemed to be oppressed. But she vtterly averted from all comfort, and giving her selfe over to melancholy, told them, *That she died, but that of the true cause of her death they were ignorant, which if they were desirous to know, they should after her death dissect her heart, and there they should finde Calais*: Intimating thereby, that the losse of *Calais* had occasioned this fatal griefe, which was thought to have beene increased by the death of the Emperor her Father-in-law. But the truth is, her liver being over-cooled by a *Mole*, these things peradventure might hasten her end, which could not otherwise be far from her, and cast her by degrees into that kinde of Dropsy, which Physicians terme *Ascites*. This Dropsy being not discovered in time, deceived her Physicians, who beleaved that she had conceived by King PHILIP, whereas she alas did breed nothing but her owne death. So mature remedies being not applied, and she not observing a fit diet, she fell into a Fever, which increasing by little and little, at last ended in her death.

She

She lieth interred at *Westminster* in the midst of that Chappell which is on the North side of her Grandfather HENRY the Seventh his Monument, where her sister Queene ELIZABETH was after buried with her, and over both by the pious liberality of that most munificent Prince King JAMES hath since beene erected a most stately Monument, well besitting the Majesty of such great Monarchs.

Queene

1558.

Queene ELIZABETH, Anno 1558.

HAVING thus briefly run over the Reignes of these three Princes, Queene ELIZABETH's times in the next place offer themselves; which deservedly requiring a more accurate stile, I will here set a period to this worke, not so much with intent to pretermitt them, as reserving them for a more exact labour. In the meane time, to give some satisfaction to the Reader, I will make this short addition.

Some few houres after the decease of Queene MARY, the Estates then assembled in Parliament, on the seventeenth of *November* declared her Sister the Lady ELIZABETH Queene, who was Daughter to HENRY the Eighth and ANNE BOLEN. Having most gloriously reigned forty foure yeares foure moneths and seven dayes, she ended her life and Reigne on the foure and twentieth of *March* Anno 1603, the Crown being by her death devolved to the renowned King of *Scots* JAMES the Sixt, to whome it was so far from feeling it a burthen to have succeeded so good a Princessse, that never was any Prince received with greater applause and gratulation of his People. Many thinke their condition happy, if they exchange a CALIGVLA for a CLAVDIVS, or a NERO for a VITELLIVS or an OTHO. But that any Mortall should please after ELIZABETH, may seeme a miracle: and is a great argument both of rare vertue in the succeeding King, and of a right iudgement in the subject. For this great Lady was so farre beyond example, that even the best Princes
come

1558.

come short of her; and they who most inveigh against that Sexe, contend, that Woman is incapable of those vertues (in her most eminent) Wisdome, Clemency, Learning, variety of Languages, and Magnanimity equall to that of Men, to which I adde feruent Zeale of Piety and true Religion. But in these things peradventure some one or other may equall her. What I shall beyond all this speake of her (and let me speake it without offence to my most excellent Soueraigne IAMES, the Paterne of Princes, the Mirrour of our Age, the Delight of *Britaine*) no age hath hitherto paraleld, nor (if my Augury faile not) none ever shall: That a Woman (and if that be not enough) a Virgin, destitute of the helpe of Parents, Brothers, Husband, being surrounded with enemies, the *Pope* thundring, the *Spaniard* threatening, the *French* scarce dissembling his secret hate, as many of the neighboring Princes as were devoted to *Rome*, clashing about her, should containe this warlike Nation not only in obedience, but in peace also, and (beyond all this) Popery being profligated, in the true Divine worship. Hence it comes to passe, that *England* (which is among the rest of it selte a Miracle) hath not these many yeares heard the noise of war; and that our Church (which she found much distracted) transcends all others of the Christian world. For you shall at this day scarce finde any Church, which either defiled with Popish superstitions, or despoiled of those Revenues which should maintaine Professors of the Truth, hath not laid open a way to all kinde of Errors, grosse Ignorance in learning (especially Divine) and at length to Ethnique Barbarousnesse. But to what end do I insist on these or the like, they beeing sufficiently knowne even to the *Barbarians* themselves, and Fame having trumpettted them throughout the world. Which things

1558.

things when and how they were done, how bountifully she aided and relieved her Allies, how bravely she resisted, brake, vanquished her Enemies, I have a desire in a continued History to declare, and will (God willing) declare, if I can attaine to the true intelligence of the passages of those times, have leasure for the compiling it, and that no other more able then my selfe (which I wish may happen) in the meane time ingage themselves therein.

* * *

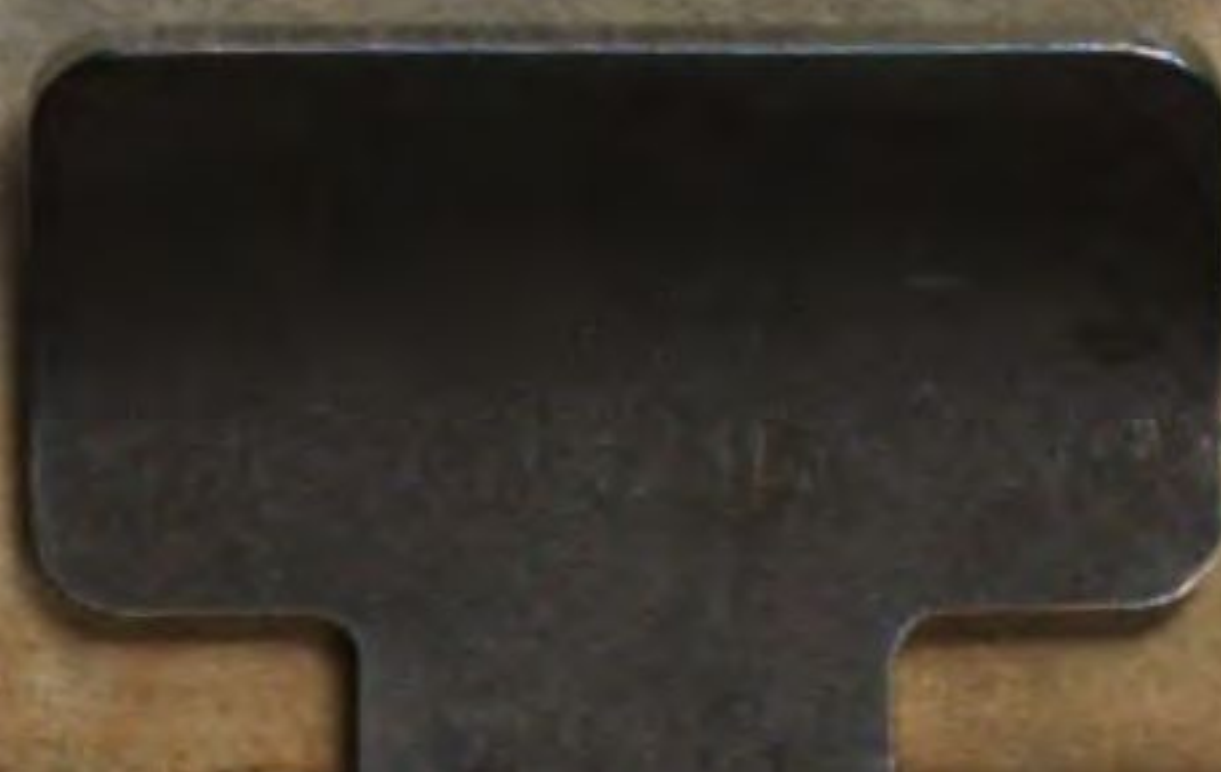
L A V S D E O.

Errata.

Pag. 4. Lin. 20. read five dayes. p. 6. l. 36. wearying. p. 11. l. 36. dele of. p. 26. l. 27. for crave read renew. p. 27. l. 7. after, her part, read, the good of the. p. 31. l. 9. into Scotland. p. 32. l. 31. this debt. p. 38. l. 13. Tournay. lin. 24. sixtieth. p. 41. l. 13. oblations at Becket's tombe. p. 51. l. 1. these. p. 64. l. 6. mutemq. l. 7. Falsus. p. 72. l. 12. doth. p. 95. l. 2. for Protector, read Proctor. pag. 97. lin. 8. 210. p. 133. l. 12. sticklers. p. 139. l. 14 & 31. S M E T O N. p. 142. l. 12. for just, read vnjust. p. 193. l. 23. M E V T A S. p. 198. l. 34. for passed, r. posted. p. 214. l. 20. Heads. p. 223. l. 13. fictitious. p. 227. l. 3. for, of, r. by. p. 238. l. 21. for, greatly, r. gently. p. 256. l. 28. disceparation. p. 278. l. 14. dele, and. *ibid.* read, could hardly. p. 313. l. 30. read out of contempt. p. 319. l. 1. for vnity, read vnion. p. 320. l. 13. read vnion.

9/1

6/2



Godwin, Francis,

Annales of England, containing the Reignes of Henry VIII, Edward VI and
Queene Mary

London 1630

Res/4 Brit. 42 e

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10887926-7